



AWAKENING

BOOK 03

Beyond

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Awakening

(仿如昨日)

by

BEYOND

Synopsis

A martial art expert from the Song dynasty lives like a Phoenix that can live again in another body after death.

This time, he happened to take over the body of a Japanese high schooler who is also a victim of bullying and has a bit complicated family circumstances.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by subudai11 @ [subudai11](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201 - Massage

“What about those two brothers?”

“Really? That’s good then. Tell them this, I don’t blame them because ordinary people can’t deal with the opposite party.”

“Thank you, goodbye.”

After hanging up the phone, Lei Yin tightly clenched his fist.

His grandma! What does that dead woman want to do?

Half an hour later, Lei Yin’s phone rang.

Just as he pressed the answer icon, a charming voice came through the speaker: “Hey, darling, do you miss me?”

Lei Yin fought back his impulse to curse, and then answered with a fake smile: “I never miss you this much.”

“That’s good, I’m afraid you’ll forget about me. You’re a heartless guy, my hands were hurt because of you.”

Lei Yin was no longer in the mood to chit chat with her, “Why did you catch Kazumi?”

“Masashi, this is the kind of question that you should not ask.”

“What do you want?”

“I just want you.”

Lei Yin cannot help but feel a headache, This woman really can drive people crazy.

“Tell me the place, I’ll be right there.”

“You really care about your sister, don’t you? I’m jealous you know. Very well, you can come here, but remember to come alone. You also know I am a shy person. If there are too many people, I may do things that I can’t control because of anxious.”

After saying her location, Sasako hung up the phone.

After whispering a curse, Lei Yin immediately went out of the apartment.

After driving his car to the said location, Lei Yin began to carefully observe the surrounding environment.

This place was a public park, which was roughly one hour away from his apartment. It was similar to the prime location in Tokyo. There were not many places like this, and most of them were on the outskirts.

On holidays, many families will travel by cars for a picnic here to feel the nature. But now the place was like a graveyard, it was as if a monster would appear at any moment.

Suddenly, his cell phone rang. If he was an average person, he would jump in a scare, but Lei Yin did not even bat an eye, and immediately pulled his mobile phone to answer the call.

“Darling, are you coming?”

“Just arrived, please don’t call me darling anymore.” Lei Yin knew that she must have been watching him. Otherwise, she simply cannot know his position.

There was a chuckle on the phone: “Oh you, I can’t believe you are so shy. You’ve almost touched my whole body, yet you said these unfeeling words, you’re really too much.”

Lei Yin did not have the patient to bother with her flirt: “Where are you now?”

“Hateful, you ignore people. Forget it, I’ll wait until you’re here to get even with you. Now go left and follow that path. At the end of the path, there is a pond. There is an old house opposite of that pond. I am in that house. Come on, don’t let people wait too long.”

After hanging up the phone, Lei Yin followed the said route.

As he walked, he quietly held his phone and dialed a number. After the call went through, he did not put the phone to his ear.

Instead, he lightly tapped the phone, sometimes fast, and sometimes slow.

Not long after, he did see the old house across the pond, just like she said.

This is an old two-storied building that is available for tourists in this park to shelter themselves in the case of rain. When Lei Yin arrived at the door, he immediately sensed there were people upstairs.

Although there were no lights on the first floor, Lei Yin came to the second floor without a hindrance.

At the second floor, he has yet to meet anyone. So he continued upward toward the roof.

On the roof, he saw Sasako sitting gracefully in a chair with legs crossed, looking at him with a smile. Kazumi was on another chair beside her, with hands tied on the back, and mouth stuffed with a handkerchief.

Seeing Lei Yin, Kazumi's eyes revealed a very worried and anxious look.

Tonight's moonlight was very bright. Even in the absence of light from the lamps, everyone can still see each other very clearly.

"Masashi, you're here." Sasako's tone of voice was similar to a wife greeting her husband from work.

After casting a glance at Kazumi, Lei Yin turned to look at Sasako, "It seems like Japan have problems with their educators. A dignified University teacher is actually reduced to a common kidnapper."

Sasako covered her mouth to chuckle, "If I didn't do this, how could you think of me?"

Lei Yin did not want to talk nonsense with her, coldly asked: "What do you want?"

“Didn’t people say it already? I just want you.”

“This is not funny.”

“I told you the truth, but you don’t believe it. How about this, in the last round, I lost to you; as a prize, I can answer several of your questions. Of course, I retain the right to choose not to answer some of the questions.”

Lei Yin did not know this woman’s true intention. After thinking for a moment, he asked: “Who are you.”

“Of course, I am your Sasako-sensei.” Her face showed a completely innocent expression.

Knowing that she wouldn’t tell the truth, Lei Yin had to ask another question, “Why did you deliberately try to get close to me? I hope you don’t say the same perfunctory answer like before.”

Sasako-sensei did not fool around this time. But smiled and said: “Very well, I will tell you. I tried to approach you to investigate your ins and out.”

Lei Yin was not too surprised, the answer was one of the scenarios he envisioned in his heart. He just did not know if what she said was true or false.

He dryly said: “Do you need to go through all of that to get my details?”

“Of course, you have the value, and the more I am in contact with you, the more curious I am. Good, your prize have been delivered. Now it’s my turn to ask you.”

With that, she suddenly pulled out a knife from her body, and then gently brushed it on Kazumi’s face. At this time, her usual flirtatious smile was all gone. She then turned around to look at him and slowly said: “Now tell me, what is the relationship between you and Rei Li of the Black Dragon?”

Lei Yin’s heart could not help but shake, he never thought this

woman would ask him this question. Ever since he fought with her, he always thought she is a member of Japanese Esper's organization. But judging from this question, that was certainly not the case.

He intentionally showed a slightly surprised look and asked: "I don't quite understand what you mean?"

"Don't try to pretend, I know you and Rei Li know each other. I am just not quite clear about the exact relationship between the two of you. So I want to ask you about this."

After lowering her head to ponder for a moment, she went on to say: "Okay, rather than quibble indefinitely with you, I will tell you one thing. I have the report of the Black Dragon internal investigation from Tang Najin before he died. The report pointed out that Rei Li has personally visited Japan to meet with a Japanese high school student. That was three years ago, and that high school student is you, Gennai Masashi."

That Tang Najin again, that guy really liked to drag people into trouble, even after he is dead. Lei Yin could not help but secretly curse that guy's 18 generations ancestors.

Knowing that he cannot dodge this question anymore, Lei Yin took a breath and said: "You guessed it right, I do know Rei Li.

"Very well, then, please talk about your relationship with him."

"He is my martial brother."

"What?" This answer was a surprise to Sasako.

Lei Yin went on to say: "Twelve years ago, Yan Yuxiao, who is Rei Li's master, came to Japan and by chance took me as his second disciple. However, besides a handful of people, no one else knew about this. Two years later, master passed away, and since then I have never had any contact with Rei Li. Until three years ago, Rei Li wanted me to join the Black Dragon to help him. But because I don't want to enter this path, I rejected him."

Yan Yuxiao was Lei Yin's previous rebirth name. Very few people knew his real name, and most of them have already died by now. That was why he can freely give his real name to Amy. Moreover, his status within the Black Dragon branch of Japan was indeed the second disciple of Yan Yuxiao, the younger martial brother of Rei Li. People who really knew that he was the reincarnation of Yan Yuxiao were Rei Li, Chan'an, and a very few trusted members of the group.

Sasako looked at him doubtfully, to her knowledge, Rei Li did have a master called Yan Yuxiao. Moreover, everyone knew that the entire Black Dragon was inherited to Rei Li from Yan Yuxiao.

This Yan Yuxiao was an absolutely legendary figure. The powerful Black Dragon organization that almost penetrate the entire world of international underworld organization was single-handedly built by him in just a few decades. According to legend, no one, or things, has ever been able to defeat him. Moreover, in the Black Dragon, his character was very low-key. Outsiders rarely have the opportunity to see him. But no one can beat his influence in the world of organized crime. Today, even though he has been dead for more than a decade, no one can rival the magnitude of his accomplishment.

"Do you have any way to prove that you are Yan Yuxiao's second disciple?" Sasako went on to ask.

"Why don't you fight me again so that you can prove it yourself." Lei Yin showed a provocative look.

"You really don't understand how to be a gentleman, how could you ask a weak woman like me to trade blows with you?" Sasako looked at him with a gentle look.

"This is the first time I see a weak woman that almost destroyed my house. The questions have been answered, shouldn't your turn now to release the people?"

"I've worked so hard to invite your sister here, how could I let

her go that easy? And I haven't finished my questions.”

“You're a really troublesome woman, hurry up and ask.”

Sasko looked at him and said: “Two years ago, Rei Li was once seized by a mysterious organization, but shortly, a group of masked people came to rescue him. At that time, those people who wanted to save him were surrounded by that mysterious organization's formidable firepower. Just then, a person – strictly speaking, we also don't know if that was a person – killed more than 200 well-trained members of the organization in just a few minutes. Moreover, he did not use any firearms, just a blade. Now I ask you, are you that man?” At the last sentence, Sasako deliberately slowed down her speech, her eyes were tightly staring at him.

The more he listened the colder he become. Lei Yin finally knew who this woman is. If she say she did not have any relation with the people in that base, he would absolutely not believe it. In other words, she was likely a US operatives sent here to investigate his power.

Right now, it would be stupid of him to immediately reply with a yes or no. But he also cannot make her wait too long. In this short period of time, his brain accelerated to its fastest speed.

After he came back from US, Chang'an told him that, except for the important document that they used as blackmail material, the whole base has been blown up by them, including all of the recording devices that recorded Lei Yin's killing of those men in black. Therefore, the one who disclosed this matter should be the head of that base who escaped at that time. Moreover, looking at her look, she did not seem 100 percent sure whether he participated in that rescue operation. In other words, the dark group member who betrayed them only informed the base about their impending rescue operation and did not have enough time to reveal more about their things. And the most important thing was, the renegade dark group member was not aware of his true

identity. Therefore, the situation was not too bad.

When Sasako asked this question, she very carefully watched his facial expressions. But to her disappointment, the man's expression was without any change, including his eyes.

After carefully analyzing all the stakes, Lei Yin said: "That time, I did come to rescue Rei Li, but I was only responsible for aiding them from the side. I did not go in with them. Chang'an told me that if something happen to him and Rei Li, I would need to take control of the Black Dragon so he did not let me go in together with them." He once disappeared for nearly two years; moreover, the time when he went missing was close to the time when this thing happened. Therefore, if he blindly deny his involvement, it would give himself away instead.

This explanation from him was actually accepted by Sasako. After all, a huge underworld organization like the Black Dragon do need someone to inherit it. And who would be more suitable candidate than the direct disciple of Yan Yuxiao, the man who created it?

How could she imagine that the twenty-something youth in front of her turned out to be the reincarnation of a millennium old ghost who has rebirthed a countless time?

After thinking about it, Sasako went on to ask: "Since you are Yan Xuyao's disciple, and you also participated in that action, then you should know about the true identity of that person."

Lei Yin simply spread his arms wide and said: "Sorry. I don't know."

Sasako frowned, "You don't know?"

"Yes, after the kidnapping of Rei Li, I was called for help by Chang'an. At the time, shortly after I got of the plane, they were ready to begin the operation. I only know that there was a very strange person by Chang'an's side."

“Strange person? What do you mean?”

“That person always cover his face even when there were only a few of us. And his eyes were very strange – I don’t know how to describe them – as if they were hungry wolves’ eyes; It was very uncomfortable. I once asked Chang’an about this man’s identity, but he just told me that the man is not a member of Black Dragon and he just asked him to help. He also told me not to ask anymore. Regarding this person, I only know that much.” In order to make her believe, Lei Yin spelled out some details about “that person.” Moreover, he was very clear that, sometimes some of the less conventional explanations were relatively easier to believe, so he simply said he did not know, and used Chang’an as a shield.

Sure enough, after hearing his words, the doubts in Sasako’s eyes gradually dwindled. This extremely subtle change can only be perceived by an old ghost like Lei Yin.

But at the same time, he also had a kind of depressed feeling. If he was still Yan Yuxiao, there was no need for him to be this evasive when he can just go all out against this people and deal a blow to them. But he was now Gennai Masashi, and there were people he needed to protect behind him, so he cannot reveal his identity under any circumstances.

In order not to let this vixen have the time to analyze his words, Lei Yin immediately said: “You should’ve finished all your question. Now let my sister go.”

As if she already got her desired answer, Sasako restored her flirtatious smile. Her hand gently stroked Kazumi’s face and said to her: “Student Kazumi, I was right wasn’t I? Your brother really cares about you. Now what should I do? I don’t know if I should just let you go so easily, after all, for this heartless elder brother of yours, you are a very good bargaining chip.”

Lei Yin coldly said: “As long as you let go of Kazumi, I won’t haggle with you over tonight’s matter ever again.”

Sasako turned to look at him and said with a smile: “Although you are not an Esper, in our previous fight, I felt like you held back a lot of your power. Therefore, I believe your words that you are Yan Yuxiao’s disciple. What a terrifying man that Yang Yuxiao was. But this is also where you attracted me the most. However, I also did not use my real power. Oh, I’d love to see how strong is the direct disciple of that legendary man.

Don’t you want another round of fight with me again? Well, I decide to give you this opportunity. If you win, I will give myself to you as the prize, of course, I will also let go of your sister.” With that, she gracefully rose up from the chair and then, with that pair of sexy slender legs, slowly walked over to him.

Lei Yin looked at her with a very calm eyes, but a wave of cool excitement, like an undercurrent, continued to well up in his mind.

Although their last fight was not a real fight, he can tell that this woman was a lot more powerful than Jiro Yamahara. From the way she effortlessly separated the entire door from the door frame to smash it at him, he can infer that he absolutely did not have victory assurance. But it was exactly because of this sense of uncertainty over victory or defeat that made him even more excited, even though he did not show it on his face.

After arriving at three meter distance from him, Sasako suddenly smiled to him. This smile was even more flirtatious than her previous smile. But almost at the same time, he felt a surge of cannot-be-explained-by-common-sense huge force that threw his whole body away.

“Bam!” A dull thumping sound resounded in this old building. Lei Yin’s body hit the top of the guardrail in a horizontal position.

This force was much more powerful than what he imagined. Even with Lei Yin’s superhuman reaction, he only had enough time to move his internal energy to reduce the impact of the

injury. However, the intense impact nevertheless made his blood rolled up and down incessantly.

Watching him slowly standing up from the ground, Sasako smilingly said: “Masashi, did I hit you too hard?”

“How could it be, this is the best massage that I’ve received in my entire life.” Lei Yin lightly said.

Chapter 202 - Fight

Looking at the smiling face of the beauty in front of him, Lei Yin found out that the woman was fiercer than what he originally thought.

If there was not guardrail that blocked him, he can't imagine how far he'd be thrown off. Not only her power was much stronger than Jiro Yamahara, the more important thing was, when she launched her power, there was no sign at all.

It seems like the only chance to win is to fight a melee with her.

After gently exhaled his breath, Lei Yin relaxed all his muscles, and then suddenly rushed toward her with amazing speed.

“How come you're suddenly this warm to me? People will get shy you know.” Sasako smiled, waiting for him to come over.

Just as Lei Yin's distance was less than three meters away from her, he was suddenly being ruthlessly thrown back to the guardrail. This time, Kazumi can clearly see the distance between his brother and that woman was still quite far, but something invisible threw her brother off. She didn't know what this woman just did.

From the first crash, Lei Yin already knew the height of the guardrail, so when he was about to hit the fence, he quickly extended his right foot to do a backpedal kick to offset this formidable force. Therefore, he no longer hit the guardrail.

After standing up again, Lei Yin calmly watched this as beautiful as a flower formidable opponent.

At this time, Sasako acted flirtatiously: “Masashi....” In the dim light of the night, her enticing voice can make all men's throat dry.

Lei Yin's mouth twitched twice, and then said: “Since you are this powerful, I won't be polite anymore.” With that, he immediately rushed toward her again.

When he was about to reach the previous distance, Sasako smiled. But quickly, her expression turned into a surprise. Because when she was about to launch her thought ability, the man suddenly shifted his position to her right at an incredible speed, and then quickly bounced from her right to crash into her.

These series of actions happened in a very short period of time, when Sasako was about to react, she has already knocked to the ground.

After she was knocked down, Lei Yin tried to lock her arms, but just then, a surge of powerful strength that was very familiar to him threw him up into the air, just like when they fought for the first time in his apartment.

Because this was on the roof, Lei Yin was thrown off ten meters into the air before he fell down.

After landing back on the roof, Lei Yin closely watched the already stood up Sasako.

“Masashi, you’re really bad. You made people’s skirt dirty.” She patted her grayish skirt and charmingly said.

“Don’t worry, I will burn a new one for you.” He rushed toward her.

But after only a few steps, she suddenly held out her hand. Masashi felt that he was unable to move even for an inch. He had experienced this exotic force wall when he fought with Jiro Yamahara, but that happened when he was at a meter distance from Jiro Yamahara. But in this case, he was still around five or six-meter distance from her. From this point, one can clearly see that she was in a whole different class than Jiro Yamahara.

Sasako smiled and said: “You really surprised me, it seems like the same trick cannot be used too many times on you.”

At this time, Lei Yin suddenly rapidly retreated. When he was outside the scope of that force wall, he suddenly stopped.

Sasako said with a sigh: “Masashi, do you still want to play? Although you very strong, you are, after all, a human.”

Lei Yin did not say anything, just put his right hand to his waist, and then took out two fingers wide, one meter long shiny black sword.

Seeing him suddenly took out a sword, Sasako said with a smile: “So you can do magic, why don’t you pull out a gun instead?”

“As far as I know, bullets are useless against you, perhaps this sword will be more effective than a gun.”

“Really? I’d like to see that.”

“You will soon know the result.” With that, Lei Yin walked to her step by step.

“You’re not rushing this time? You are so fierce, I still cannot be too affectionate with you.” With that, she stretched out her slender arm toward him.

After a few attack, Lei Yin found that her attack was not entirely without any sign. Simply because it happened so quickly. That was why he did not notice the sign at the beginning.

When he was about six meters away from her, he immediately sensed a tiny fluctuation in the air, that was the only sign he observed when she started her attack.

Now it was too late to think. He swung his sword horizontally almost at the same time he sensed that air fluctuation.

Sasako, who stood in front of him, cannot even see what he just did, but felt as if there was something flashed. But at the same time, she suddenly felt a sharp pain on her palm.

The intense pain made her uncontrollably cry out.

Looking at her right-hand palm, she saw there was a deep cut line. A faint trace of bright red blood oozed out from there.

For a time, Sasako cannot believe at what she saw on her right

palm.

How is this possible? I obviously had laid out my force field, and he was clearly still six meters away from me. How could my hand be injured?

“What did you just do?” With left hand clutching her wound, her face looked at him in horror.

“This is a good question, but I refuse to answer.” A dangerous smile appeared on the corner of Lei Yin’s mouth as he went to her one step at a time.

At this time, Sasako has lost her confidence to play this game anymore. Since she acquired this power, this was the first time she felt the threat of death. Moreover, it came from an opponent that was not an Esper. Almost subconsciously, she slowly stepped back.

When she was close to the guardrail, she suddenly jumped down.

Lei Yin could not imagine that she would stop playing this quick, immediately rushed out and jumped across the fence.

Although he jumped from the third floor, it was nothing to Lei Yin. When he landed on the ground, Sasako was already ten meters ahead of him.

Sasako was able to use her thought ability to help her accelerate her escape, but Lei Yin’s lightness skill can keep up with her. The two people’s speed far exceed the limit of human’s body. In the night, both were like ghosts.

After running for five to six minutes, Sasako’s female physique was unable to continue this strenuous exercise for too long, gradually, she began to slow down. Seeing this, Lei Yin, who still has many breaths in his lungs, immediately sent his internal force to his legs to accelerate his speed. All of a sudden, the distance between the two was down to only five meters or so.

Hearing the increasingly clear footsteps and breathing behind her, a burst of numbness spread all over Sasako’s body. Her mind

has never been filled with this kind of terrible sensation.

She was well aware of what kind of man he is, after knowing so many of his secrets, he is not going to let her go. Thinking of this, she really regretted her decision to provoke him. If she knew he was this powerful, at the time, she would not have taken this mission.

This fear was eating away her nerves. Although she wanted to throw off the source of that fear behind her, no matter how desperate she ran, he was still tightly chasing her. Moreover, she could feel that he was getting closer. This continuous superimposed-horror experience almost made her mad.

Just then, she suddenly slipped, her whole body immediately fell down to the ground. Instantly, her heart sank.

Never thought that the opposite party would deliver herself in such a big way, Lei Yin immediately rushed to pin her on the ground. He used his right hand to clasp her throat and tightly held her waist with his left hand to prevent her from throwing him away again.

At this time, Sasako, who was being pressed under his body, was breathing hard, her intense fatigue caused her body unable to resist his action.

Although Lei Yin has lost some of his breath, compared to her, his situation was much better. Even so, he did not dare to take this woman lightly. He did not loosen his clasp on her throat.

At this time, their position, with Lei Yin at the top and Sasako at the bottom, was really ambiguous. But who would have thought they were just having a life and death battle just a moment ago.

After a while, after she was able to catch her breath, Lei Yin said: "Looks like I win this round, Sasako-sensei."

Sasako sighed and said: "You win. If you want to kill me then go ahead. But, considering that I did not hurt your sister, I hope you

would let me suffer less.”

Lei Yin suddenly said: “Please don’t get me wrong, I have no intention to kill you.”

“You are not going to kill me?” Sasako was very surprised and turned her head to look at him.

“Now I am going to let go of your hands, but don’t use your superpower to resist. There is something I want to talk with you.”

“If my ability is useful, I will not be chased so miserably by you. Quickly let go of me, you are hurting my neck.” Hearing him not going to kill her, Sasako immediately restored her nature.

This woman really has a lot of nerves. Lei Yin started to loosen his grab on her neck and her waist.

When he stood up, he kept his right hand on his sword hilt to guard against her sudden move.

“My foot hurts, I think it’s dislocated. Help me stand up.” When she wanted to stand up, Sasako suddenly frowned, showing a slightly painful look.

Lei Yin had to lend her his left hand, but at the same time, he carefully watched this sly woman from playing any trick.

After he pulled her up, she suddenly looked shaky. Taking advantage of this opportunity, she immediately went into his arms.

Lei Yin did not stop her. Instead, he put his free left hand around her.

After holding his waist with her left hand, Sasako showed her right palm toward him and said with glistening teardrops: “You’re a heartless guy, look at what you did to my hand?”

Lei Yin looked at her palm. Besides seeing the bloody wound, he also saw a lot of mud caused by her previous fall. The black and red color mixed together.

“So are you, I almost died in your hands.” Lei Yin pretended not to see her pitiful look.

Leaning her head on his chest, Sasako faintly said: “You’re the most heartless man I’ve ever seen. I really don’t understand why would I like such a man like you.”

Seeing her like this, Lei Yin frowned, “Don’t waste time with this, let’s get down to business. For your identity, I probably can guess it a little. And you already know about my identity. Although I don’t know why you want to find that person, it has nothing to do with me. I just want to live peacefully. I hope later on you won’t bother me anymore. I won’t haggle with you over this time’s matter, but if in the future you move your hands on my family again, then I will make sure you experience something that you will not forget for your entire life. No matter what, I am still Yan Yuxiao’s disciple, and my influence in Black Dragon is second only to Rei Li. At worst, I can just go all out with you.”

At first, Lei Yin had wanted to silence her. But when he heard about Tang Najin’s report about his meeting with Rei Li, he was certain that some people other than her have seen it too. Even if he kills her, the organization behind her will send other people to replace her. Rather than constantly on the lookout for a potential enemy, it was better to just let them think that he was indeed Yan Yuxiao’s disciple so that they will not doubt his true identity.

Sasako thought for a moment and then said: “Very well, I will convey your words to the above. But as far as what those old guys want to do, it’s none of my business.”

“Then thank you. Our talk is over, you should be able to walk by now. With your power, flying back directly to your place shouldn’t be a problem, right?”

Sasako charmingly roared: “Do you think an Esper is a Superman? I don’t care, you made people covered in cuts and bruises, shouldn’t you be a gentleman and send me back?” She said

as she affectionately put her arms around his neck.

After casting her a glance, Lei Yin inserted his black sword back into the belt.

Since he encountered the experimental body in the parking lot, Lei Yin specifically asked Chang'an to make him a strong flexible sword, with special metals, that can be inserted in his belt. When he fought with Jabin in Kyoto, if Brin was not able to find him an iron rod, he may be forced to use his sword to kill Jabin.

After putting his sword back, without saying anything, Lei Yin picked her up.

Although this vixen was very hateful, there was one thing he can't deny, and that was, she did not want to kill him. He inferred this when he fought with her just a moment ago. Perhaps, as she put it, she just wanted to investigate.

Seeing him acted so straightforwardly like this, Sasako very happily kissed his face.

From the moment he picked her up, Lei Yin's hand never left the 'life gate' acupuncture point on her back. Although she has no reason to kill him, he was still very wary of her.

Afraid that something happened to Kazumi, Lei Yin held Sasako in his arms as he ran back to the old house.

When he ran to the third floor and saw Kazumi still tied on a chair, Lei Yin finally breathed a sigh of relief.

Although he has already arranged a sniper in the vicinity, if Sasako came here with her partner, a mere sniper is useless.

Seeing her brother came back with that woman in his arms, Kazumi showed a puzzled look.

After putting Sasako on a chair, Lei Yin walked over and helped her untie the rope.

When she saw Kazumi immediately hug her brother as soon she

the rope was untied, Sasako sourly said: “Such a deep sibling’s love.”

Lei Yin ignored her, he lowered his head to look at Kazumi and said: “It’s all right, let’s go back.”

Kazumi looked up to him with a face filled with concern: “Brother, are you hurt?”

“I’m not hurt, don’t worry.”

Seeing that he really wasn’t hurt, Kazumi slightly felt at ease.

After turning her head to look at Sasako, who was sitting on a chair, Kazumi asked: “Brother, who is she?”

Lei Yin said: “I will tell you later when we get back.”

Kazumi nodded her head and stopped asking anymore.

Chapter 203 - Hard To Say

“Please sit down, make yourself at home. Initially, I wanted to properly welcome the two of you, but I was hurt by a hard-hearted man, so there’s no way for me to welcome the guests. There are some juices and sodas in the fridge, you can take it yourself if you are thirsty.” After entering Sasako’s apartment, she greeted her two guests warmly while still lying in the arms of her male guest.

When Lei Yin put her on the sofa in the living room, she suddenly grabbed his clothes, “You’re not thinking of just leaving me here aren’t you? At least, you should help me deal with the wound caused by your good deed.”

Seeing Lei Yin has no intention of denying it, Sasako ground her teeth and said: “You bast*rd, are you still a man?”

“Before you scold me, please review what you did first.” After thinking for a moment, he said to his sister, who stood beside him: “Kazumi, wait here, I will help her clean the wound.”

After casting Sasako a glance, Kazumi nodded her head.

After feeling a bit proud for being taken to the bathroom by Lei Yin, before Lei Yin put her down, she suddenly yelled, “How did I become like this!” She cannot believe the look that she saw in the mirror, with hair and face stained with a lot of mud just like a street bum.

Lei Yin lightly said: “That’s none of my business, you fell yourself.”

Sasako grabbed him by the collar using her uninjured left hand and shouted: “Bast*rd, if you did not chase me from behind, how could I possibly fall?”

“As I said, before you say anything, please review your action first.”

Looking at his indifferent look, Sasako immediately has the urge

to bite him.

After she used the towel to wipe her face, Lei Yin turned the bathroom faucet and started to help her clean the wound on her right hand.

“Ow, it hurts, be a bit gentle will you?”

“Just bear it for a moment, I am cleaning the mud inside the wound.”

“Bear my ss, it’s easy for you to say that, but it so dmn hurts.”

“You’re really troublesome, all right, it’s almost done.”

After washing the wound, she watched him using toilet papers to carefully dry the wound. Sasako’s heart suddenly filled with a strange feeling. It turns out that he also has a tender side.

Although at first, he seemed unwilling, but when he started to help her wash the wound, his care was beyond her expectation.

After drying her wound, Lei Yin turned around and said to her: “Where is the medicine cabinet....”

For a time, it was quiet in the bathroom.

After an indeterminate amount of time later, when her lips left his lips, Lei Yin quietly looked at her, “Why did you do that?”

“Remember what I told you before? If I lose, I will give myself as a prize for you. That was the down payment.” While speaking, she did not show her usual flirtatious face but calmly talked like it was a very common thing.

Lei Yin took one look at her eyes, and then said: “Go to the living room, I will help you with the medicine.”

Sasako clung to him and whispered: “Am I really not the least bit attractive to you?”

“You are really an impressive woman. But you should be very clear that even if the two of us are not against each other, it is

impossible for us to live in peace and harmony. Unless you leave your organization.”

Sasako raised her head and looked at him deeply, “You want me to make a choice?”

“I am just stating the fact.”

Sasako shook her head, “Although you know my identity, you don’t know just how powerful our force is. As long as those old guys are willing to unleash it, to destroy an organization like Black Dragon is not a very difficult thing.”

“I know, after all is said and done, Black Dragon is an underworld gang and could not possibly survive against the state apparatus. But if we go all out, even if we cannot cause heavy losses to your organization, it is also impossible for you to not suffer any losses. After all, the power behind you cannot possibly openly come forward to help you, at that time, it may develop into scuffles.”

Sasako sighed and said: “Without taking the last step, nobody knows what’s going to happen. Forget it, let’s stop talking this depressing thing anymore. You don’t need to pay attention to my background, you just need to know that I am a woman who likes you. Is this not much simpler?”

Lei Yin did not answer, but said: “Let’s go to the hall to put the medicine on your wound.”

Seeing him walking away just like that, Sasako immediately said: “Hey, don’t forget my twisted ankle. Hold me out.”

Lei Yin said without turning his head: “Rein back your evil fun, you’ve just accidentally put your foot down.”

Sasako looked down and, sure enough, saw her feet naturally standing on the floor.

After giving him a stern look, she charmingly scolded: “Stingy man, a hug is not going to kill you.” With that, she followed him out of the bathroom.

After raising her right hand, Sasako deliberately leaned intimately against Lei Yin's body, and then, with very proud eyes, looked at Kazumi who was sitting on the sofa.

Seeing her look, Kazumi coldly humphed and turned her head, not wanting to see her.

Sasako smiled like a Fox stealing a chicken.

After he helped her tying the gauze, Lei Yin stood up and said: "It's done, we have to go back."

Having no reason to make him stay any longer, Sasako has to nod.

When sending them to the door, Sasako embraced Lei Yin and coquettishly said: "Masashi, remember to come over and accompany me."

Seeing the woman almost shrunk her entire body into her brother's arms, Kazumi's face immediately became gloomy.

"Hey, enough playing." Pulling her arms open, Lei Yin went out of the door.

After the two left, Sasako lifted her right hand and then quietly watched the white gauze for a long time without moving.

After coming out from Sasako's apartment, Lei Yin said to the girl, who has been quiet all this time: "Kazumi, how about we go to my place, there is something I want to tell you."

Kazumi nodded her head.

Looking at Kazumi slowly coming out of the bathroom wearing his long robe, who was obviously too long for her, Lei Yin could not help but smile.

Seeing the undisguised smile on her brother's face, Kazumi cannot help but blush. She knew how odd she looks right now, but there were no woman's clothes that she can use, so she can only wear his clothes.

Because he very rarely saw this cool and savvy young girl showed this much embarrassment, Lei Yin wanted to savor the moment even more.

Lei Yin smiled, picked up a cup of hot milk on the table and gave it to her.

Kazumi reached out her hands to receive it, and after slowly took a few sips, gently breathed out a sigh. Only then did she really feel settled down.

Tonight, she saw a phenomenon that was beyond her imagination and overturned her common sense. But she also heard a shocking conversation that made her confused. If not for, after bathing in a hot water, the residual feeling of hot water still in her veins, she even thought that she was in a dream.

After she drank the milk, Lei Yin said in a deep voice: “Kazumi, I believe you have heard what that woman said in my conversation with her.”

Kazumi looked up at him and then nodded.

Lei Yin knew that he can no longer keep the secret from her. However, what secret he need to tell her and how much, those were the things that gave him a headache.

Kazumi quietly watched him for a moment, and then asked: “Who are you?”

Lei Yin wryly smiled, No wonder she’s the top honor student in her class, her first question is already pointing straight at the core problem.

This question seemed very simple, but for him, it is one of the most complicated issues.

If he tells her the same set of rhetoric answer like what he said to Sasako, perhaps he can deceive those who haven’t had a deep contact with him. But it cannot possibly make Kazumi, who has lived together with “Hirota Masashi” for more than ten years,

believe. Moreover, subjectively, he did not want to lie to her.

But he also cannot tell her the truth about his rebirth to this body. Not because he is afraid that she would leak it, but because this would involve a more complex issue than the first answer.

Looking at him frowning like he was pondering something for a long time and has yet to answer her, Kazumi suddenly laughed silently.

She gently hugged him, and her soft body fell on his arms. And then, after putting her head on his shoulder, Kazumi tenderly said: “Brother, don’t answer that, you really don’t need to.”

For her thoughtfulness, Lei Yin did not know what to say. After a while, he sighed and said: “Some of the facts are difficult for me to explain them to you, but I don’t want to lie to you. I am really sorry.”

Slightly shaking her head, Kazumi whispered: “Although I don’t know who you are, I know you are definitely not Hirota Masashi. Because it is impossible for Hirota Masashi to be fluent in two foreign languages, as well proficient in Kendo. He would not be so gently taking care of my feelings, and will not take such a big risk in order to save me. Actually, I have known all of these, but I have always been afraid to ask because I am afraid that all of these will change.

To me, brother is the most important person in my life. I really do not want to know who you are, as long as I can stay by your side, can I?”

Feeling the girl’s warm temperature, Lei Yin hugged her and said in a gentle voice: “Fine, as long as you don’t mind me annoying you.”

Hearing this answer was the exact same answer he said at the junior high school reunion three years ago, Kazumi welled up in tears. She slowly repeated her reply three years ago: “I will bother

you then.”

Lei Yin smiled and gently stroked her hair.

Soon, a week went by, everything seemed back to normal calm.

But the calm is only for Lei Yin and Kazumi, other people did not seem calm.

Sasako, the top famous amazing teacher, still continued her class. But after school, she, intentionally or otherwise, came in contact with Lei Yin more and more.

For Takeda who often walked with Lei Yin, this result was amazing. But this excited youth did not perceive in his mind that his sexy goddess was seeing his friend with eyes filled with temptation.

One day in a class, watching the dazed Take Asasei lying on the table, Kazumi sighed in her heart. For a week, her friend has been listless like this. But she knew that saying anything is useless, so she can only wait for her to slowly recover.

Initially, Take Asasei did not want to attend the class, but Kazumi thought that if she let her stay in the apartment alone, her friend would let her imaginations run wild, so she managed to drag her here.

At this time, a man came in from outside the classroom. After glancing around, he walked toward Kazumi's seat. When he arrived there, the man calmly sat on the seat next to her.

In these past few days, her heart was filled with uneasy feeling. That was because the hateful woman is constantly pestering her brother. Although the woman seemed to have no hostility toward his brother, regarding the strange ability and mysterious identity of that woman, Kazumi's mind was filled with alertness.

While thinking about these, Kazumi and the dazed Take Asasei failed to notice the person that sat next to them. But many girls have already noticed that person.

“Look, that guy is handsome!”

“Wow, that’s Yasuda-senpai.”

“Who is he? Is he a student from another faculty?”

“Idiot, you don’t even know him. He is Yasuda-senpai, the second year student in Business Management.”

“It’s really Yasuda-senpai. Strange, why would he come here?”

The subject of conversation of those girls, Yasuda-senpai, did not talk to anybody. He just looked at the pondering girl next to him with strange eyes.

This was the first time he saw her face this close.

The ordinary white shirt that she wore on her body seemed simple yet elegant, but also not noticeable.

Her pretty face was without makeup; the first time for him to see a woman without one. Although she wore no makeup, her skin was very good. Totally unlike other girls who used foundation to cover their skin problem.

She was not that kind of glamorous beauty, but there was an exciting intellectual beauty in her. Yasuda still can’t forget her look when she wore the skirt that night.

After a while, the pondering Kazumi seemed to feel something. When she looked up, she saw there were several girls in front of her who turned their heads to look at her.

She soon discovered that those girls were not looking at her but at the seat next to her. She then turned her head to look.

Yasuda never thought a person’s facial expression can have so many variations.

Shocked, surprised, angry, disgusted, and so on. These series of expressions on her face constantly changed in a very short period of time, replacing one after the other.

Because now was still the class period, Kazumi did not immediately pull Take Asasei to leave, but her expression was like someone who sat beside a cockroach.

“Kazumi, long time no see, how have you been?” Yasuda said to her with a smile.

Seemingly hearing his voice, Take Asasei turned her head to look and immediately started to tear up.

“Now is the class period, if you can understand the human language, please shut up.” Kazumi coldly said.

Yasuda said in a low voice: “Kazumi, I am here to apologize to you two.”

Kazumi once again sneered: “I can’t believe the word apologize is in your dictionary, I’m really surprised.”

“Whether you believe it or not, I sincerely come here to apologize to little Asasei.” With that, he looked at Take Asasei and said: “Little Asasei, I was wrong, I shouldn’t have done such a thing. Will you forgive me, please?”

Hearing his words, Take Asasei’s tears started to fall and in the end, she simply lied on the table to cry. Fortunately, they sat at the back so her crying voice was not too loud. But those girls at the front who turned their head to look at Yasuda saw this and immediately lowered their heads and started to whisper.

Although she did not know what kind of trick this playboy was playing here, Kazumi did not make any noise and just looked at him indifferently.

After the class, Kazumi immediately pulled the crying Take Asasei out of the classroom.

Yasuda wanted to follow them, but one of the girls called him, “Yasuda-senpai.”

Yasuda looked back and saw the caller was Mingyu Jizi (Haruko’s

frenemy – she first appeared in the party at the Hotel where Lei Yin met with the experimental body). He then remembered that Jizi was a Literature Faculty student.

After her narrow waist came to his presence, Mingyu Jizi said with a smile: “Yasuda-senpai, long time no see, how is uncle Ogata?”

“My dad is in good health, thank you for your concern.”

“Can I ask why Yasuda-senpai is here? Can you tell me?” Mingyu Jizi lovingly looked at him.

“Just doing some minor things. I am sorry, I have to do something. If you’ll excuse me.” With that, he turned around and walked out the door.

Seeing he was in such a hurry, Mingyu Jizi’s eyes showed a disappointed look.

After thinking for a moment, she said to a boy next to her: “Hayake, can you help me check the information about the girl who just cried in the class?”

Although the heart was very reluctant, in order not to oppose her wish, that boy nodded his head.

—

Gently stroking her luxuriant long hair, Lei Yin asked: “Have you been busy recently?”

Lying comfortably in his arms like a cat, Naoko shook her head and said: “Not too busy, just had to write a bit more these days.”

“Looks like my Naoko will become a great writer.” Lei Yin licked her earlobe.

She could not help but gently groaned and then whispered: “How could I? You always make fun of people.”

Hearing her slightly coquettish tone, Lei Yin’s heart could not help but move.

The lying down Naoko immediately felt his natural response; her face suddenly flushed.

Lei Yin was about to turn off the TV and bring her into the room, but he suddenly saw the video clip on the news on the TV. support the translator, read this on subudai11.com

Seeing this news, Lei Yin suddenly stopped and then tightly watched the journalist reporting the news.

Seemingly realizing that something was odd, Naoko endured the shame and looked up at him, only to find that his face has turned very strange.

Chapter 204 - Together

South of Manhattan, USA. Two days ago, there were large explosions on a third story building not far from the famous Wall Street.

According to the nearby residents, there were three successive explosion sounds. Moreover, many people saw the continued surge of fire.

Because of the proximity to the famous financial center on Wall Street, plus such large explosions were rare in New York City, it aroused the attention of many journalists.

Although the fire has been successfully put out, the building was completely burned and its outer layer blackened; Broken glasses scattered around along with the stones, looking very unsightly.

Many reporters suspected that this was a terrorist act, but the Government denied that, saying that it was completely an accident. For this explanation, many people hold a skeptical attitude.

Fortunately, the explosions happened late at night; Except for a few staffs in charge of night guards, there were no other people working inside the building. Therefore, the number of deaths and injured were limited.

Now is the morning of the third day after the explosions, some cleanup workers began to clean up the nearby debris and broken glasses, as well as stones. Although two days have passed, there were still some journalists outside of the blocked site.

Among the crowd of spectators, a forty years old man is silently watching the second and the third floor, which suffered the biggest explosions.

Half an hour later, he quietly left the scene and went into a nearby restaurant.

After casually ordering something to the waiter, he looked outside the window to the ruined building with strange eyes. After a while, he took out his mobile phone and dialed an airline.

From the Atlanta airport, the middle-aged man did not go to a hotel, but directly went North of the City by car to a nearby cemetery.

Arriving there, he stayed in a nearby hotel.

About nine o'clock in the evening, the middle-aged man was in his room watching the news on TV. At this time, someone knocked at the door.

When he opened the door, he saw a woman with a very heavy makeup and hourglass figure.

She threw a flirtatious look at the man and said: "Sir, do you want extra services?"

"No need."

"Do not reject so quickly, why don't you check on them first." She said, and then put the man's hand on her huge chest and made it knead them.

With a nonchalant look, the man withdrew his hand. "I am sorry, I don't need it."

Seeing that the man was really uninterested, the woman had to leave the room with a disappointed look. But before leaving, she whispered some swear words.

The middle-aged man smiled, shut the door and continued to watch TV.

Around 11 o'clock in the evening, the middle-aged man walked out of the hotel, and then quietly walked to the cemetery.

The cemetery was very large and surrounded by trees, and because it was quite a distance from the road, it was very quiet.

At night, this cemetery, with almost no lights, looked a lot like

the one in horror stories, which can make most people's hair stand on end.

After entering the cemetery, the man walked while counting the number of tombstones that he passed. At the 67th tombstone, he stopped. He then carefully looked at the inscription on the tombstone.

He then walked behind the tombstone and started digging with a small shovel in his hand.

He carefully dug the ground, as if he was afraid it would spoil the lawn. When he dug to 30 cm deep, the shovel seemed to hit something.

He continued to dig for a while and found a small iron box

He opened the unlocked box and saw there was a small package wrapped in a plastic bag.

He put the bag into his pocket without seeing it, put the iron box inside the pit and reburied it. He restored the original soil as best as he could.

Back at the hotel room, he took out the stuff inside his pocket. After opening the plastic bag, he saw there was a folded map.

This map is clearly marked. After carefully looking at the marked position, he took out a lighter and burned the map.

Watching the slowly burned map, the man's heart finally sighed in relief. Looks like the two of them are still alive.

—

“Chang'an, when do you think Master will come?” At this time, Rei Li coughed a few times.

Chang'an went to his bedside and said: “Rest assured, I have put the map in the secret place, he should be here soon. How do you feel today?”

“A bit better than yesterday, but it still hurts like hell.”

“Wait a minute, I’ll get you some painkillers.”

“His grandma! I never thought those guys would make their move so soon; if I didn’t escape quickly, I would have died.”

“Fortunately, his excellency (previously Master) informed us in advance. Otherwise, we would’ve been wiped out by this time.”

At this time, a strange rhythm of knocking came through the door.

Chang’an immediately grabbed his pistol and then raised his voice to ask: “What happens?”

A man voice came through the door, “Your excellency, there is a suspicious man outside. But his way of knocking is the same like what you told us.”

“What does he look like?”

“It’s a man in his forties and seems to be Asian.”

Chang’an could not help but look at Rei Li and say: “Let him in.”

“Yes.”

Seeing the gate of the old house suddenly opened in silent, the middle-aged man who has been waiting for quite a while slowly walked in.

In the dark hall, he suddenly heard the sound of a young man, “Follow me, please.”

The middle-aged man felt like he was being surrounded by at least five muzzles. As long as there is any change, this place will immediately turn into a hornet’s nest.

He followed the young man in the dark to the second floor. Then the young man led him into a room.

Under the weak lighting, seeing that person’s face, Chang’an’s eyes were immediately filled with undisguised surprise, “Your excellency, you’re finally here.”

“What happened?” After putting down the wig and artificial skin, Lei Yin first looked at Rei Li, who was lying down on the bed strapped with bandages, and then turned around and asked Chang’an.

“It’s those men in black, they attacked our bases once again. But this time, there were much more of them. Fortunately, your excellency warned us last week that the enemy would likely make their move. Therefore, the casualties are not that heavy. But we lost contact with other divisions.”

“Why would they do that? Is it for that information?”

Chang’an replied: “Probably. Although I don’t know how they knew, one copy of the data is indeed in little Rei’s shell company.”

Lei Yin turned to Rei Li. “How did you get hurt?”

Being asked about this issue, Rei Li was full on fire as he said: “One day I will skin those sons of b*tches *sses. I was in a meeting with some people in the company when those guys suddenly rushed in and started killing people. At the time I was injured; when they chased me, I had no other choice than to send people to leak the gas on the first-floor restaurant, blowing several of them.”
read this on subudai11.com

Lei Yin looked askance at him, “Meeting? Why would there be a meeting late at night? You’re not having a secret meeting are you?”

Rei Li said discontentedly: “It’s a real meeting, Master. Don’t always judge me so quick like that, okay?”

“There’s nothing to be done, your credit rating is too poor.” After lowering his head to think for a moment, he asked Chang’an: “Didn’t you already make a deal with them? Why would those guys want to make their move on you again?”

“I don’t know either. This attack is a bit unusual, it seems like they are more blatant than before.”

Lei Yin said in a deep voice: “This may be a real full-scale war.”

Hearing this, Chang'an and Rei Li's hearts could not help but sink. They knew what force behind those men in black is, which definitely no underworld gangs can compete.

Lei Yin continued: “This is their territory, so we are at huge disadvantages here. We have to leave the country as soon as possible. If somewhere else, their ground force would not dare to follow us in the open. If it becomes murky, that's our best advantage and we don't need to be afraid anymore. However, among them, there are some people that you have to be very careful to deal with.” Lei Yin then told them about his encounter with Sasako.

Hearing that the woman can almost fight to a draw with Lei Yin, Rei Li asked in amazement: “Is that woman really that powerful?”

“Yes. She's the most powerful Esper I have ever seen. Let's hope that there are not many people like her, otherwise, this war will be very difficult to cope with. Now we don't need to think about it too much, the most important thing is for you to recover first. Until things calm down a bit, we will leave this place. Did you prepare the things that I told you in advance?”

Rei Li nodded his head, “I've prepared them. This abandoned villa is among those.”

After his fight with Sasako a week ago, Lei Yin had a sense of foreboding that those men in black may soon strike Rei Li's forces once again. Otherwise, they would not send her to investigate him. Therefore, he called Rei Li to secretly save some arms on several storage points, as well as cash and canned food, just in case. But he never thought the other party would make their move this fast.

Thus, Rei Li continued to recuperate for a few days. Chang'an and Lei Yin stayed in the room to look after him, but sometimes they would take turns to inspect the situation outside.

By the third day, Rei Li manage to get out of bed and move around. Seeing his injuries gradually healed, his mood improved a lot.

When everyone was having dinner, Lei Yin suddenly felt uneasy. Having an acute sense of danger, he immediately dropped his can and stood up.

“Master, what happens?” Rei Li asked.

“I’ll go out and check it.” With that, Lei Yin covered his face and jumped out of the window.

After arriving outside, Lei Yin carefully observed the surrounding environment. When he turned and saw Chang’an, he walked toward him.

Seeing Chang’an standing atop a tree in full alert, Lei Yin gently leaped up and softly asked: “Do you see something?”

Chang’an replied, just as softly: “It seems nothing is unusual.”

“Be careful, I have a bad feeling about this. Why don’t you check on those guys guarding at the front? Look for their situation.”

“Okay.” Chang’an fully believed Lei Yin’s intuition. At that moment, he immediately took out his intercom and contacted their group members at the front.

After a while, he replied: “Your excellency, our on-duty members do not discover something unusual in the front.”

“Let’s hope I am just overthinking things.”

“Your excellency, later on, what should we do?”

Lei Yin thought about it and said: “There’s nothing to think about, we just need to get out of here alive. Later on, Black Dragon will be headquartered elsewhere. Moreover, as much as possible we have to reduce our contact here. If it still doesn’t work, then we’ll simply dissolve the Black Dragon, breaking it into pieces.”

“If you want to dissolve the Black Dragon, little Rei would

certainly be the first to oppose.”

“You two are not the same as me, there is only one life for each of you, once it’s over then it’s over. This is not a debatable issue, my primary concern is to keep the two of you alive. As long as we survive this, we will have a chance to revenge in the future.”

“I understand, your excellency.”

Suddenly, Lei Yin’s face turned really ugly. The first to aware of his sudden change was Chang’an, who immediately asked: “Your excellency, what’s wrong?”

“His grandma. We’ve been sold. Get back inside and bring little Rei out of here. A group of people is approaching this place. Go, I’ll cover you.” With that, he raised his submachine gun and jumped down from the tree.

Being teamed up with him for so many years, Chang’an knew that the situation was critical. Without saying a word, he immediately jumped down and then ran toward the abandoned villa.

Less than three minutes later, indeed, there were light rapid footsteps coming from the woods. Then, under the cover of darkness, more than twenty shadows continued to come close to the villa.

At the same time, there came a strange sound and a split second later, a dull humming sound sounded in the woods.

Not long after, came a somewhat muffled screaming sound.

At this time, those men in black who have observed that there were traps in the vicinity, immediately stopped and walked slowly and carefully.

Seeing them stopped, Lei Yin did not want to consume his time on them anymore and immediately turned around and ran toward the villa.

On their arranged escape route, on an alley next to the villa Lei Yin saw Chang'an and members of their dark group carrying Rei Li. Besides them, there were five trusted dark group members.

After joining with them, Lei Yin immediately led them to continue their escape.

Not long after that, suddenly there came a burst of propeller rotation sound above their heads. When they looked up, they saw two helicopters with searchlights flying in their direction.

"His grandma, they even called the helicopters! Is this a Vietnam war?" Rei Li cursed.

Lei Yin knew that the helicopters must have some kind of heat detection devices, otherwise, it would be impossible for them to accurately find their location in this dark environment.

"You guys have rocket launchers?" Knowing that they could not hide from those devices, Lei Yin made a decision to take down the helicopters.

"It's in the villa, but because we're in a hurry, we forgot to take it." Rei Li regretfully said.

Suddenly, a row of bullets was shot from one of the helicopters, hitting the tree trunk on the ground in front of them.

"Quickly find places to cover yourself." Lei Yin shouted and pulled the two youths, who carried Rei Li, on a nearby tree to hide.

That first row of bullets seemed like an opening ceremony, not long after they each took cover, those bullets came right at them again, forcing everyone to not move heedlessly. But the searchlights continued to move around them.

At this time, a voice came through a loudspeaker from the helicopter, "As long as you are willing to lay down your guns and surrender, we will not harm you. Now I am going to count to thirty, if at the end you are not willing to surrender, we will kill you on the spot. One, two, three...."

“Master, what do we do?” Rei Li asked.

“We have to put both helicopters down; They are just stalling for times. If we wait those people on the ground to surround us, even if we want to escape, we can’t. You stay here and don’t move, I am going to deal with them.” With that, he pulled out a grenade from his body and jumped up at an extreme speed.

Seeing someone jumped, they immediately fired on his position.

With an impressive speed, Lei Yin continued to jump around and dodge. As he dodged the bullets, he measured the height of the helicopter from the ground with his peripheral vision.

At this time, Chang’an understood his intention. He beckoned the dark group members next to him and then jumped out to shoot at the helicopter to cover Lei Yin.

Another helicopter, seeing someone jumped out, immediately fired back at him.

At this time, the helicopter was continuously shooting at Lei Yin with a submachine gun. But because of the high, it was hard for them to aim at Lei Yin, so they immediately gave up on him, who they thought was non-threatening, and started to open fire at the other one who returned fire at them.

Seizing this chance, Lei Yin immediately pulled the pin of the grenade in his hand and then threw it. Not only that, he also pulled out a pistol and took aim at the grenade.

When the grenade was at a few centimeters away from the helicopter’s window, he shot that grenade.

The bullet hit straight at the grenade, and it suddenly exploded. A powerful explosion smashed the glass window, pouring flames into the cockpit. In less than three seconds, the helicopter completely lost control and unsteadily fell down from the air. Finally, it exploded a second after it crashed to the ground.

The other helicopter froze its shooting, they did not know what

happened and forgot to shoot at Chang'an.

Just then, the person on the gun saw a black object flew toward him. He subconsciously wanted to open fire at it, but at this moment, along with a gunshot, that thing split apart and then turned into a huge group of fire. He screamed and felt the assaulting flow of heat.

After seeing the second helicopter fell to the ground and exploded, Lei Yin yelled to the several of his people not far away from him: "Get out of here, fast."

Hearing his yell, those several dark team members immediately gave their response and continued to run behind him.

Three minutes later, from behind, thirty men in black leotards finally arrived at the scene. Seeing the flames of the burning helicopters, the muscular man who walked at the front, pulled out a cell phone and dialed a number.

"The operation is failed. They got away."

As soon as he finished, a burst of angry yell came from the phone, "Good for nothing! So many people with two helicopters and yet they still got away. Keeping you completely waste our money."

The eyes of that man in black flashed a hint of anger, but he still very politely said: "They should have heavy weapons like rocket launchers, the two helicopters have been shot down by them."

The man on the phone continued to curse: "I don't care how much, in short, except for Rei Li, you can do anything you want with the others. Remember, if Rei Li die, each and every one of you must die together with him."

"Understood."

After hanging up the phone, that man punched the tree next to him.

"Boom!" With a thud, that waist-sized tree turned into a pulp by

that man's punch.

“Everybody follow me.” After slightly calming his angry emotion, he led the other men in black to continue to pursue along that path.

Chapter 205 - The Chase

After stealing two cars, Lei Yin and his party of eight people quietly left Atlanta under the cover of night.

“Master, where do we want to go now?”

“To Boston, where the coastline is long there. I don’t believe I won’t find a ship leaving US. Initially, I thought we could wait until the situation calmed down a bit, but now it seems like we can’t, it’s too dangerous to stay here for too long.” Lei Yin answered while looking at the map.

Seeing Rei Li’s eyes somewhat lost their focus, Chang’an assured him, “Little Rei, we have already transferred our funds, and with our network, we can operate elsewhere. The one we gave up is just a part of our industry that happens to be the in US.”

Rei Li sighed and said: “I know, but we have put so much effort here, I am really unwilling to walk away just like that.”

Chang’an went silent, they indeed have spent a lot of time and effort here.

At this time the one driving the car suddenly said: “Boss, there’s a police inspection at the front intersection, do we continue?”

Rei Li said: “Master, we might as well go a different route. If those guys are coming toward us, it will be difficult for us to drive away if we are to be discovered here.”

Lei Yin thought for a moment and then said: “Fine, but we need to find a place to rest first. We will find a way tomorrow.”

Rei Li nodded and told the dark team members to quietly mix with the other cars and drive back in silence.

After nearly an hour of driving, they found an empty house where the homeowner seemed to be on a vacation. They decided to stay here for the night to rest their tired bodies.

Hearing someone knocking on the door, Lei Yin said: "Come in."

After the door was opened, Rei Li and Chang'an came in.

Although Lei Yin wore a middle-aged man skin-mask, Chang'an can still see a trace of fatigue in his eyes: "Your excellency, are you okay?"

After drinking the glass of water offered by Rei Li, Lei Yin put down the empty glass and said: "I am okay, just a bit tired. But in a case of emergency, this is nothing."

After continuously eliminating his real appearance and add a new one from the five strong-willed dark group members' memories, even Lei Yin's vigorous spiritual power became somewhat strained.

If this was before, it was not a big deal to let their trusted group members to know his real identity. But now, they faced an opponent that is nearly impossible to defeat. In order to prevent those who were caught to revealing his identity, he felt that doing this is very necessary. And his new identity is his previous decade's identity, Yan Yuxiao, who is Rei Li's Master. This can also explain why Rei Li always call him Master.

After a while, Rei Li asked: "Master, do you think those guys know our hiding place?"

"The biggest possibility is there is a traitor. But when I eliminated their memories just now, I asked them some questions. I can confirm that none of them are traitors. The problem could be on your informer."

Rei Li pounded the table hard, "This is so uncomfortable, we can do nothing but being chased by those guys."

Chang'an somewhat worriedly said: Your excellency, I think those people are getting crazier. This time they even used helicopters as if they weren't afraid it will bring attention from others."

Lei Yin said: “I found it strange also. If they’re only after that information, they did not have to do this. Nevertheless, our first priority is to leave the US. Go get some rest, it is already late.”

“Your excellency, you need to rest early too, we’ll take our leave.” Chang’an and Rei Li stood up.

Lei Yin nodded his head.

After the two people left the room, Lei Yin sat on the bed, deep in thought.

—

“Miss Hase, the dinner is ready.” A voice came from outside a quiet room.

After the door was opened, Naoko said to the elegant woman: “Thank you, miss Sakurai.”

“You are too kind.” Sakurai Mion said with a smile.

In the living room, the two beautiful woman began to eat quietly.

After eating for a bit, Naoko put down her chopsticks and said to Sakurai Mion: “I have had enough, Miss Sakurai.”

Seeing that she only ate a half bowl of rice, Sakurai Mion said: “Miss Hase, you ate too little, please take care of your body. Otherwise, Mr. Gennai would be very worried.”

Hearing her man’s name, Naoko could not help but start to worry.

Since he sent her here in the care of Sakurai Mion a few days ago, he never appeared and never called. This familiar scenario made her think back to when he went missing two years ago.

These days, if it weren’t for Miss Sakurai’s company, she might begin to indulge in flights of fancy.

Seeing her expression, Sakurai Mion knew she was remembering the man. She put down her chopsticks to comfort her: “Miss Hase,

please do not worry, Mr. Gennai will definitely come back safely.”

“Thank you, Miss Sakurai.” Remembering that he did not leave her with disturbing words this time, unlike the last time, she felt a little bit better.

He will definitely come back. Naoko slowly traced the ring on her finger.

Watching her spirit restored a bit, Sakurai Mion slightly calmed down.

After several days being together with her, Sakurai Mion can feel that this ‘sister-in-law’ is almost on the stage of blind love to that man. But on the other hand, she is so intelligent and considerate. After being together for so long, she never asked her any questions. Every day she would be very calm but slightly worried about that man. She had never seen a woman like her.

After a while, Naoko suddenly picked up her chopsticks and then said with a smile to Sakurai Mion: “You are right, I shouldn’t have let him worry about me. I know he’d come back.” With that, she continued to eat quietly.

Sakurai Mion smiled and picked up her chopsticks....

In order to restore their energy, except for the members in charge of night duties, everyone tried to take as much sleep as they can, because they did not know how long before they could take another rest.

In the kitchen cabinet in the kitchen, Rei Li found some instant noodles. After being hungry for almost a day, he, who never ate this kind of junk food, found out that it was surprisingly delicious.

After a day of rest, everyone has restored their energies, and the little depressing atmosphere slowly faded away. At 11:00 PM, Lei Yin walked in from the outside.

“Master, what’s the current situation outside?”

“The checkpoint has been removed, perhaps they did not come after us. We will continue to hit the road tonight.”

Hearing that they can leave, all the people showed an excited look.

When the two cars were speeding on the highway, they did not know that three helicopters appeared at the house after they were about one kilometer away from the place. The rotating sound of the huge propellers attracted the attention of the nearby residents. A lot of people opened their windows or doors to see what happened.

After a thorough search, one of the men in black who went inside the house just a moment ago walked toward the tall and sturdy man: “There is no one inside. Additionally, we found some wheel marks in the nearby woods, I believe they have driven away.”

At this time, another man in black walked over and said: “I just received news from one of the highway toll stations, which has face recognition system, it photographed several people who look just like them.”

The sturdy man immediately exclaimed: “Call everyone to immediately board the helicopters.”

Two hours later, Lei Yin looked at the time; it was 2 o'clock in the morning. At this time, very few cars were on the road. On average, they would only see a car almost every ten minutes.

Because he has taken a sleep for a day, Rei Li was in a good spirit. He was listening to the music on the radio while humming along with it. Seeing him like this, Lei Yin smiled and turned his head to look outside of the window. Although there were street lights, there was a depressing silence in the highway late at night.

At this time, he suddenly heard some strange sounds. He first thought it was the wind, but soon thought it was wrong.

“Be quiet and turn off the radio.” Lei Yin shouted in low voice.

The crew immediately turned off the radio; Rei Li also looked at him strangely. Apart from the sound of the wind coming through the gap at the window, it was quiet in the car. Chang'an, who has been closing his eyes all this time, opened his eyes and started to carefully listen to the outside sound.

After a while, Lei Yin said in a deep voice: "It's a helicopter. There are two of them. And they are coming toward us."

Hearing what he said, everyone's heart could not help but sink.

"Master, are we going to abandon the cars now?" Rei Li immediately asked.

"No, currently, there are no covers around us, if we abandon the cars, they will soon catch up. Right now we need to speed up, as long as we can find a forest, we'll have a chance to escape."

After passing the instructions to the car behind them, the two cars picked up their speed, speeding along the highway.

Ten minutes later, even other people can listen to the sound of the rotating propellers of the helicopter, not from the back, but from the front. Moreover, a high-intensity spotlight was lit up from the helicopter to illuminate them. Soon, the sound of the other two helicopters in hot pursuit from behind can also be heard by them.

"Turn right." Lei Yin shouted out loud.

The member immediately turned the car right, leaving the highway. The car behind closely followed them.

Because the ground was filled with rocks and potholes, the two cars went up and down hard on it.

Because the seriously bad road condition affected their speed, the three helicopters were getting closer and closer.

"Open the sunroof." Lei Yin said and took a grenade from his body.

"The car doesn't have a sunroof." The member exclaimed loudly.

Rei Li immediately picked up a submachine gun and fired it upward to make a rectangular shape on the roof. In the deafening sound of the submachine gun, the hot shells continuously fell down.

When he stopped firing, Lei Yin lifted his foot upward and kicked out that rectangular shape made by bullets on the roof. He then lifted his head a bit to observed the location of the helicopter.

Two minutes later, when the helicopter was less than 20 meters away from them, Lei Yin suddenly lifted his body through the rectangular hole on the roof and then threw a grenade toward it.

When Lei Yin was aiming the grenade, wanting to repeat the previous trick, the whole car suddenly jerked upward, almost throwing him outside the car,

“His grandma, can’t you drive a bit better?” Lei Yin scolded and helplessly watched the anti-tank grenade as it hit the helicopter and fell off. A few seconds later, the grenade exploded on the ground, bursting out a beautiful but useless flame.

“Your excellency, I am sorry, that was a big hole.” That crew said aloud.

“Forget it, it doesn’t matter.” Lei Yin somewhat disappointedly sat back to his seat.

“Master, what now?”

“If we can’t find a cover soon, it would be quite troublesome. But strange, why don’t they shoot at us?”

At this time, that crew member in the driver position suddenly said: “Your excellency, there’s a forest at the front.”

Hearing this, Lei Yin immediately took one look at the front and really saw an average sized forest at the front.

He could not help but laugh, “It seems like our luck isn’t too bad.”

Near the cars that have just been abandoned, about ten men in black jumped out of the helicopters.

At this time, that tall and sturdy man said to the three pilots: “I want you three to surround them from the outside. If you see them trying to escape, shoot to push them back. And immediately notify the headquarters, tell them our present location.”

After seeing the three helicopters lifted off, that man immediately went in with the other men in black.

Chapter 206 - Signal

When the ten men in black were less than 200 meters into the woods, all of a sudden, a few car engine sounds broke the forest tranquility, but also made them shocked.

“Quickly go back.” The leading tall strong man shouted as he ran back, other men in black immediately followed.

After running to the original position, they saw the two abandoned vehicles had disappeared. In the darkness, they saw four orange lights leaving farther and farther.

“All helicopters return to the initial location, the target vehicles escaped again and need to be pursued immediately. Repeat, all helicopters return to the original position, the target vehicles had just fled and need to be pursued.” The tall sturdy man in black exclaimed through the radio.

Finishing his command, he looked at the two escaping cars and said to himself: “You guys cannot run away.”

Less than two minutes later, three helicopters flew in from three directions. The first two to arrive successfully landed on the ground. The tall sturdy man immediately called two-thirds of the men in black and immediately divided them into two batches for each of the helicopters.

When the first two people entered the first helicopter, the second helicopter had just opened the door. Suddenly, five or six semi-elliptical objects flew from different directions toward them. One of those objects even entered the cabin of the second helicopter.

Hearing the abnormal sound from behind him, the pilot of the helicopter immediately looked back. Seeing the shape of that small object, his whole face turned white in an instant.

“Boom”, “boom”...

Thundering explosions scared the birds away from the woods.

In those powerful explosions, two helicopters turned into two masses of red fire. The nearby seven men in black, that were preparing to board the helicopters, were instantly fried; their residual limbs and pieces of broken metal were strewn everywhere. The rolling flames continued to rise upward.

Because of the distance, the other three men in black can quickly dodge away and fortunately survive that ambush. They immediately laid on the ground and opened fire on the two sides and then retreated toward the woods.

At this time, the third helicopter saw the fire on the ground and did not dare to descend and circle around twenty meters above the ground.

“What’s happening down there, please answer.” In the cabin, the pilot used the radio to ask in a loud voice.

After a while, he finally heard the reply from the tall sturdy man. “We were ambushed, the enemy hid on either side of the entrance to the woods. Quickly shoot a suppressive fire for us.”

Just as the pilot was about to open the left entrance to provide them with suppressive fire, he saw a black semi-ellipse object suddenly appeared in front of the window of his previous position. He could see what it was. Suddenly, a gunshot was heard. Then he saw that thing suddenly split into a red flame at an alarming rate. That fire continued to expand until finally, before the pilot had the time to cry out, that huge fire, all of a sudden, burst in, breaking the front window glass and flooding the cabin.

Seeing that plane exploded on the ground, Lei Yin jumped down from the tree top ten meters above the ground.

The clumps of trees did not affect his speed, after a few jumps, he came to Chang’an’ side.

“What’s the situation?”

“Your excellency, three people are still alive.”

“Don’t bother with them, we need to leave here ASAP, otherwise, if their reinforcement arrives, we’d be in trouble.”

“I have informed the two drivers, they should be back soon.”

Lei Yin nodded, and then said: “Lucky for us, we can solve those three helicopters at once.” According to his initial estimate, at most, they can simultaneously deal two helicopters. But, luckily, the first two helicopters descended on the ground almost at the same time. Thus gave them the opportunity to simultaneously deal the two helicopters, and the third not long after that.

At this time, the two ‘escaping’ cars arrived. Seeing the three burning flames on the ground, Rei Li, who sat in the first car, was very excited.

Lei Yin immediately said to Chang’an: “Don’t play with them any longer. Immediately call the other people back.”

“Yes, your excellency.” Chang’an, through radio, immediately notified the other ambush team on the other side to come here.

Although it was not very clear, the remaining three men in black also heard the car engine sounds.

“Captain, what do we do now?” One of the men in black asked the tall sturdy man next to him.

“Shut up!” The man said in a low voice. Looking at the orange lights from the cars in front of them, he was also very anxious.

This latest failure has put him in a great danger, if after losing these many helicopters and people, and he still fails to catch Rei Li, he really didn’t know what those people will do to him.

Thinking about this, he said to the other two: “We need to split up and rush to their cars. We must obtain their cars. In a moment, our reinforcement will arrive.”

The two men in black nodded and rushed out from both sides. And that tall sturdy man went forward under the cover of the

trees.

Under the faint light of stars, Lei Yin can clearly see the three people coming toward them from the woods. He immediately lowered his voice and said: “They want to fight back. Chang’an, you handle the one on the left, and the two of them handle the one on the right. I will deal with the one in the middle. And call the other three members, tell them to rush.” With that, he found a good tree to cover himself. He held the gun, waiting for that tall sturdy man. Chang’an commanded the other two members to get out of the cars and guard the other side of his position.

After more than ten seconds later, that tall sturdy man was already two hundred meters away from their positions. Just as he was about to rush to the other tree to take cover, he was shot by Lei Yin.

Lei Yin frowned, just now he clearly hit his heart, but the guy acted as if nothing happened and did not even flinch. Perhaps that guy is wearing a special bulletproof vest.

Lei Yin said to Chang’an and the two team members: “They might be wearing body armor, aim for their heads.”

“Understood, your excellency.”

At this time, the three team members arrived from the other side. Seeing them trying to help shooting, Lei Yin immediately said: “Quickly go inside the cars.”

Those three team members immediately got in the car.

Seeing them wanting to leave, that tall sturdy man loudly roared, no longer hiding behind trees. He directly opened fire and rushed toward them.

Lei Yin precisely waited for this opportunity. He immediately aimed for the guy’s forehead and shot.

Seeing the bullet coming toward him, that tall sturdy man immediately lifted both of his hands in front of his face.

A “clang” sound was heard, When the bullet hit the man’s hand, it sent a metallic collision sound.

After this shot was blocked, that man kept his hands in front of his face posture and continued to rush toward Lei Yin. Soon, the two hundred meters initial distance has been reduced to less than a hundred meters.

Lei Yin tried to feel for the grenade on his body but found none. He immediately asked: “Who has a grenade?”

“Your excellency.” Chang’an threw the grenade to him.

After Lei Yin caught it, he immediately pulled the pin and threw it toward that man. He also started aiming the position where that grenade likely to land.

But before the grenade came to him, that man immediately jumped out of the way to the right.

Shortly thereafter, that man got up and continued to run toward Lei Yin. Not far behind him, the grenade exploded.

“You guys immediately drive away, he wants to destroy our cars. Quick!” Lei Yin shouted as he fired a few shots at the man’s thighs, chest, abdomen, face, and other parts of his body. However, when the thighs, abdomen, and chest were hit, they exuded metallic collision sound. The one aimed at his face was blocked by his hand.

At this time, the two cars have left the place by his command. But because the ground surface was bad, it was hard for them to speed up. Seeing the cars starting to leave, the man was even more madly rushing toward them. He was now less than 40 meters away from Lei Yin and several of his people. At the same time, the other two men in black people began to fire at them as they rushed. Chang’an and the other two team members immediately counterattacked with their submachine guns.

“Your excellency, let’s join our forces and kill him.” By this time, Chang’an had also found that the man was unusual, so he hastily

said.

“I don’t know what’s with him, I fired several shots, but they don’t seem to have any effect on him. Try hit him on the head from the side.” Unexpectedly encountering this sort of opponent, Lei Yin put his gun back to his waist, and then, from the belt, pulled out a meter or so black sword.

Chang’an immediately fired his submachine gun toward the man’s head from the side. The man immediately raised his right hand to protect his left face but his two feet did not slow down.

When the man was less than four meters away from Lei Yin, Chang’an did not dare to shoot anymore because he was afraid of accidentally hitting Lei Yin. He can only anxiously look at the two people.

Watching the man was about to hit him, Lei Yin suddenly took a side step to let him past and immediately swung the sword in a backhanded move toward the man’s neck.

Like a non-entity specter, the black sword silently passed through the man’s wrist, across his neck, and finally, noiselessly stopped in mid-air.

That man’s eyes revealed a look of disbelief because he saw his body dashed forward, but it was a body without a head.

Picking up the hand that he just cut, Lei Yin saw that it was not really a hand. When he looked at the cross-section of the wrist, he saw a thick metal outer layer and densely packed wires in the inside.

Seeing this, his heart was moved. He took two steps forward before the headless body and removed its black upper outer garment. He found that there was no bulletproof vest, but it was not a normal human skin either. Instead, it was a glowing silver-gray metallic surface. When he touched it, it has a warm temperature.

At this time, Chang'an, who has disposed of his part of man in black, walked over and saw the body of that man. He cannot help but said with amazement: "Your excellency, this is...."

Lei Yin said in a heavy voice: "Do you still remember the research project on that base? If I guess it right, this may be the successful result of that research, the real mixture of humans with machines. I believe that below this layer of metal are his internal organs. What a disgusting opponent."

Chang'an gawked at that metallic surface.

Lei Yin stood up and said: "Call the other two team members back, tell them not to bother with that man in black anymore, we have to get out of here fast." With that, he waved at the two cars that already quite far away.

In the car, Rei Li asked: "Master, how did they know our location now?"

Lei Yin answered: "I was just thinking about this problem." Previously, it can be explained that they have a traitor, but after tonight's development, this reason was difficult to hold on.

Ten minutes after they entered the highway, Lei Yin saw a lake. He immediately told them to stop, and then after they all went out of the cars, they pushed the cars down the lake.

"From the map, there should be a relatively large town not far away in front of us. When we arrive there, we'll find a place to rest first and then steal two cars before we leave." Lei Yin looked at the map and said.

Therefore, the group started to walk forward on foot. Because his leg injury has not completely healed yet, Rei Li leaned on a team member to slowly walk.

As he walked, Lei Yin continued to think about that problem. If this problem cannot be resolved, no matter where they fled, someone will always come at their doorstep.

After thinking for a moment, he suddenly saw something flashed on Chang'an's hand as he later walked at the front. Immediately it dawned on him.

"Chang'an, little Rei, take off the rings in your hands and give them to me." Lei Yin said out loud.

Rei Li was stunned for a moment, but he immediately understood. After taking off the ring, he asked: "Master, you mean, they managed to find us by using the signal on this transmitter? But the frequency and the wavelength of the signal are known by us only. Without the data, it's impossible for them to make the corresponding detector."

At this time, Chang'an also handed his ring to Lei Yin.

After taking the two rings, Lei Yin immediately picked up a stone and smashed the two signal transmitters.

After throwing them away, Lei Yin clapped his hands and said: "We were deceived by them. Actually, two years ago when they captured you, they already knew that the ring is a signal transmitter. As long as the ring is in their hands, obtaining the transmitter value is a very simple problem. But as a failsafe, they pretended not to know you have this thing so that they can make a move on you later in the future. The transmitter sends out its signal in half an hour apart each time, which explains why they can't immediately discover our whereabouts on the highway because we were always on the move so our position changed accordingly. Because they always can't accurately find us, it means they did find us through the signal transmitter."

After walking for two hours, the eight people finally saw the numerous sparkling lights in front of them. It seemed like they finally found the marked town on the map.

They looked for an old house in the suburb to rest for a day. The next day at 9:00 PM, Lei Yin and Chang'an went to town to buy foods.

Coming back, each of them drove a stolen car back to the house.

In this way – hiding by day and coming out by night – they kept going forward to Boston.

Perhaps because the rings were destroyed, along the way, they never encountered those men in black.

Chapter 207 - Restaurant

“Ding!” A door bell rang, a blonde girl from a few shelves filled with auto parts came over.

She said to the young man who had just entered the door: “Welcome, what can I do for you?”

“I want to speak with your boss, Robin. Is he here?”

“He is repairing a car inside the garage. Wait here for a moment, I will inform him.” With that, she poured him a glass of water.

“Thank you.” The young man sat on the sofa inside the reception room.

Not long after that, a young American man whose hands stained with oil came from the inside along with that blonde girl.

Seeing the smiling young Asian man sitting on the sofa, Robin was stunned for a moment, and then rushed over to him in a pleasant-surprise-look.

Seeing the boss was about to hug the man, the blonde girl could not help but kindly remind him: “Robin, you still have oil in your hands.”

Hearing this, Robin immediately took back his hands so as not to touch his friend’s clothes.

“When did you come?” Robin excitedly said.

The Asian man smiled and said: “I came to the US to handle something. Along the way, I decided to visit you.”

“Wait a minute, I will take a quick shower and then I will take you to eat.”

“Will it affect your work?”

“No, it won’t. You sit here first. Mary, you help me greet my good friend.” With that, Robin rushed out the room, wanting to

take a quick shower and change clothes.

Seeing him happy like a child, the blonde girl cannot help but smile.

Soon, after he took a quick shower and changed into casual clothes, Robin walked out, “Mary, please handle the store for me. Lei Yin, let’s go.”

“Okay.” The blond girl called Mary replied.

The Asian youth quietly smiled from the side, haven’t seen him in a long time, he’s more mature now. He didn’t dye his hair with strange colors anymore and like fancy dress. He also a lot calmer now. It seems like time really can change a lot of things.

Knowing his friend’s dislike for ostentatiousness, Robin did not take him to a fancy restaurant, but to a place he previously took him, a middle-sized Italian restaurant that has a distinct flavor.

Listening to a full of rich Italian music and each tasting a plate of spaghetti with tomato sauce, plus a bottle of wine, the two young man with different nationalities and colors felt very carefree and comfortable.

“How is your store business recently?” After taking a sip of the red wine, Lei Yin asked.

“Not bad. I have some friends who helped me pull a lot of guests to come over.” Robin said while eating.

“You still visit the church?”

“Once a week or so at a time, sometimes when I am helping Father shopping, I’ll go there two or three times.”

“What about Father, sister Jill, and the others?”

“Father’s waist is a little under the weather recently, after all, he is old. I’ve tried to talk to him to reduce the number of times he went out to preach, but you also know that he is a very stubborn man and won’t listen to my advice. As for sister Jill and the other

nurses, they are good. What about you, how are you recently?”

Lei Yin smiled, “At least, I am still alive, right? That’s enough for me. Let us toast for being alive.” With that, he lifted his glass filled with red wine.

Robin was teased to smile by him. He also picked up his glass, made a toast, and drank it in one gulp.

“That girl you called Mary, does she have a boyfriend?” Lei Yin suddenly asked.

“Not yet, why, do you like her?” Robin unexpectedly smiled.

“Not me, it’s you. I think she is a good girl, don’t you ever think about it?”

“To be honest, I am not in the mood.”

“Because of sister Jill?”

Robin did not deny. He smiled a bit, “Liking a person is a very easy thing to do, but to forget the people that you like is very difficult. Sometimes, I also think that I am a fool. I know that it is impossible for me and sister Jill to be together, but every time I see her, I cannot help but start to indulge myself in flights of fancy.”

“Time, time will dilute everything. Take your time, you have much of it anyway.”

“You still like to preach.”

“Strange. Why have so many people told me that same thing?”

Robin laughed, “It seems like if you don’t become a priest, it would be a waste.”

“No, I am not suitable for such a serious work.”

“When will you leave?”

“Tomorrow.”

“So soon?” Robin was surprised.

“There’s something I need to do. I am just stopping by to see you.”

Robin showed a disappointed expression, “We rarely meet each other, I never thought it would be so soon to say goodbye. Tomorrow, I am going to send you out.”

“We are two big guys, no need to be sentimental like that. Don’t worry, when this thing is over, I will find a time to visit you again. Tonight, don’t think too much, we’ll drink until we’re drunk.” With that, Lei Yin raised his glass once again.

Knowing that he is a man of his word, Robin had to give up and raised his glass.

The two men talked until late at night, drinking bottle after bottle of wine. Finally, the two of them left when the restaurant was about to close, Robin has been severely intoxicated.

Fortunately, he lived in his previous place so Lei Yin can bring him back using his memory.

After putting him in bed, he watched the already unconscious blonde man.

“I hope we can still meet in this life.” Patting him on the shoulder, Lei Yin pulled the sheet to cover him. After casting him a glance, Lei Yin closed the door and left.

“Master, did you find the ship?” After Lei Yin took a bath, Rei Li asked.

“Yes, it’s a boat that was used to smuggle people to the United States. But the boat cannot sail immediately because the smugglers want to avoid the downward wind. Moreover, they need to do a hull maintenance and buy some supplies. Therefore, we need to wait until next week before we can set sail.”

“So, we have to stay here for a week?”

“If nothing changes, then yes. How about your legs?”

“It’s fine now.” After days of fleeing from Atlanta to Boston, his wounds finally healed.

“That’s good. Where is Chang’an?”

“He went outside to buy food.”

Knowing Chang’an’ cautiousness, he felt at ease, not worried that Chang’an would be recognized.

The overall situation seemed certain now.

But losing the headquarters and many years of effort just like that made Rei Li grew more and more unhappy. In the end, he could not help slam his fist on the table, “Master, I am really unwilling to accept this. Are we just going to let those gangs of turtles cheat on us like that?”

Lei Yin squinted his eyes at him, “Then what do you want?”

“I....” For a moment, Rei Li was at a loss for words. He also knew who the opposite party is. Moreover, they have finally managed to escape all the way here with great difficulties. It’s just that, there was a strong sense of resentment in his heart that has always been hard to dispel.

Seeing Rei Li’s gloomy face, Lei Yin suddenly showed a pondering look.

“Are you really upset?” He gently asked this sentence.

Rei Li looked up at him and then fiercely nodded.

“Are you afraid to die?” Lei Yin strangely smiled.

“I am the leader of the number one underworld gang, if I am afraid to die, I won’t enter this world in the first place.” Rei Li loudly said.

“Perhaps we will really die.”

“Master, what are you going to do?” Rei Li finally noticed the oddness in his master’s face.

“The so-called to train the troops for a thousand days only to use them for a day. The Black Dragon have also raised this kind of people for years, it’s time for them to do something. Honestly, after being chased like a rat for so long, I am very unhappy too. When did I, this father, become a faint-hearted turtle? Since this time it was someone else who messed with us first, if we want to play, we need to go big. However, you have to think it very clearly, if we do play, it is highly likely that we will end up losing everything, even so much so that we will be hunted down every day. Right now, you are in charge of the Black Dragon, so you decide if we play this or not.”

Blankly staring at his master’s bottomless eyes, Rei Li seemed able to see two indistinct flames slowly rose from the abyss. Fifteen years ago, he had seen this kind of look once. The thing that happened at the time can still be clearly remembered by him.

To outsiders, he is a strange man. Because he liked to handle matters not according to common sense, many underworld people thought that he is a weirdo. But only he, himself knew best that this was just a subtle influence from his master to him. Moreover, only he knew best that his master is the true freak. His master seemed to be a mix of contradictions. No matter what position his master found himself in, his master will try to keep a low profile and in an unobtrusive position. But sometimes, or in some special time, his master will do some unbelievable things.

Tightly clenching his fist, Rei Li suddenly pounded the table, abruptly smashing down a corner of the table.

“His grandma! If I, this father, must die, I want a spectacular funeral, and I want those sons of turtles to be buried along with me. We play!” Rei Li stood up and roared.

The sound in the room alerted the three dark group members and, holding their guns, they immediately rushed to the room to see what happened.

But soon they were shocked because they saw the two men, one old, one young, loudly guffawed like two maniacs.

Seeing this strange scene, these three dark team members looked at each other, completely unaware of what was going on between these two, master and disciple.

Chapter 208 - Vacuum

The Pentagon, Virginia, USA, has been hailed as the world's most secured military command center. At this point, at the ground floor of the building, a middle-aged man in uniform said to a slightly younger Lieutenant Colonel: "Have you found the whereabouts of those people?"

"I am very sorry, it seems like they have found that we use the signal transmitters to find their location. Therefore, until now, we still cannot find their whereabouts. At the same time, because this is a secret, we do not dare to carry out a blanket search, so their whereabouts could not be found." The Lieutenant Colonel said, streaming with sweat.

The Colonel coldly said: "This is not the time to offer excuses. If they escape from the USA, then that gentleman will fly into a rage."

"I, I understand. I will add additional manpower to trace them, please give us some time."

"I hope you won't disappoint me this time. "

"Please rest assured, I will not."

"If you find their whereabouts, remember to immediately notify me."

"Yes, sir."

The Colonel dryly looked at him, turned around, and walked out.

Shortly after he just went out, the adjutant of the Lieutenant Colonel suddenly took off his earphone and said to the Lieutenant Colonel: "Report, I just received some information about the Black Dragon. Many of their members, without knowing why, suddenly left their location and went to other places that were unknown to us."

The Lieutenant Colonel eyebrows jumped, he seemed to sense a hint of an unusual movement. He said to the adjutant: “Continue to trace them. Moreover, I want you to contact our insiders and tell them to look for the reason of this.”

“Okay.” The adjutant immediately began directing the other subordinates.

However, on the third morning, the Lieutenant Colonel was called into the office.

After he went in, he was surprised to see the Intelligence Officer in charge of the North American was also in it. This usually insufferably arrogant officer was sweating profusely as he looked down at the ground. The Colonel, dressed in his uniform, was sitting away from him, looking at the TV on the wall.

If this was usual, seeing his embarrassed arch rival, the Lieutenant Colonel, after going home, would certainly open a bottle of Champagne to celebrate. However, after seeing the news video clips on the television, his face sank.

“Last night, there were a series of gang-related violence in the Latin American community in Washington D.C. At least five people were killed in the shootout in Washington D.C. central zone, three kilometers away from the White House. The Latin American gangster activity have become more active, they use violence to control the nearby Latin American community. People can see some gangsters draw their gang marks on the wall, on the pedestrian crossing street, and even some of the street signs, defining their sphere of influence, indicating their loyalties to some of the gangs.”

“At Montgomery County in northern suburbs of Washington D.C. there were 5 shootings that continuously happened in 16 hours straight, 5 people were killed. These 5 people include one white male, one African-American, one Latin-American man, one white woman, and one Latin-American woman. According to

witnesses, the suspected shooter is a gang member so the local police suspect that this is a turf war between several gangs.”

“This morning in southern California, San Jose suffered their worst serial bombings in 10 years. Many areas suffered unknown explosions. The resulting fire destroyed more than 10 houses. In which, 10 people were killed and more than 100 people were injured and hospitalized. Right now, the local police have imposed martial law in the area to prevent similar incidents from happening again.”

“This morning in Queens, New York, there was a fatal shooting in one of the fast food restaurant that left 5 people dead and 2 injured. It is reported that at 11:00 PM burst into the restaurant, forcing the 7 employees who were preparing to leave to enter the basement. After tying them up, these gunmen opened fire at them. According to local police, 4 people died on the spot and 1 people died at the hospital. 2 were injured and one of them is in critical condition. The criminals fled after committing the crime. The police are now investigating the case.”

“The Washington Post reported that, last night....”

“Click.” The Colonel turned the TV off with the remote.

The Lieutenant Colonel and the Intelligence Officer were silent. There was a deadly silent in the room.

Slowly turning his head, the Colonel coldly looked at the two of them, “It is almost a week since this kind of news starting to appear in various states, don’t the two of you have anything to say about this?”

The hearts of the Lieutenant Colonel and the Intelligence Officer grew cold. Both did not dare to make a noise.

“Now I ask the two of you, do you have anything to explain this? Answer me!” The Colonel pounded the table with his fist and thundered.

The two of them shook in fear. After a while, the Intelligence Officer slowly said: “Report, this is because those gangsters in the area are competing for territories, resulting in turf wars. I have deployed....”

“I am asking you why this is happening, I don’t want to listen to your cr*p. Lieutenant Colonel, answer my question.”

The Lieutenant Colonel was surprised and immediately said: “That, that’s because the Black Dragon suddenly withdrew from those areas, which create power vacuums in those areas. Other gangs want to seize these areas from the nearby gang, which triggered the turf wars.”

The Colonel’s face slightly changed and then continued to ask: “Did you find out why they did this?”

“According to the information that I have, the power of the Black Dragon that are distributed in Northern and Southern part of the USA is showing the sign of collapse. Moreover, besides some not so easy to sell assets like property, other assets like shares, deposits, futures, etc., the vast majority of these assets have been transferred abroad. And just a few days ago, they all suddenly left their locations. This triggered the turf wars between gangs. So I judge that they really planned to evacuate from the USA to overseas.”

The Colonel said with a sinking sound: “Although this is the case, don’t you think that their actions are too sudden? All of these happened in just a few days.”

The Lieutenant Colonel was temporarily speechless. After a moment he said: “Probably because they already know that their leader is being pursued by us. Therefore, this is their reaction to that.”

“Do you know where are the missing Black Dragon members now?”

“From our undercover agent’s report, in addition to selling off all of their industries, they appear to order a batch of tickets to go abroad. They seem indifferent to other gangs robbing their turfs. They may want to sell the several important industries belong to the Black Dragon first and then leave the United States.”

“Those people are dangerous. No matter what they want to do, I want you to keep monitor them very closely. Don’t make any mistakes. The recent continuous occurrence of street shootings and bombings have made the gentleman very angry.”

“I understand, Sir.”

Turning around to look at the ugly complexion of the Intelligence Officer, the Colonel dryly said: “Officer, do you know how many gangs, as well as their members in the United States?”

The Intelligence Officer replied: “Report, Sir. In the entire United States, there are around twenty thousand gangs and around seven hundred thirty thousand gang members.”

“These are worrying figures. Now these gangs have harmed the United States more than the terrorist organizations. If similar gang wars and bombings continue, you should be very clear about the severity of the consequences. I hope you can stop the development of this situation as soon as possible, which is also what the gentlemen want.”

“I, I understand.” The Intelligence Officer immediately responded.

As the two men walked out of the Colonel’s office, looking at the self-satisfied smile of the Lieutenant Colonel, the Intelligence Officer coldly humphed and briskly left. Looking at his angry back, the Lieutenant Colonel’s face was incomparably smug.

—

“Master, as per your plan, the Black Dragon members in the United States have been shrunk down.” After hanging up the

phone, Rei Li said to Lei Yin who was reading the Newspaper.

“How many people can we directly command now?” Lei Yin asked without lifting his head.

“Because New York and Philadelphia are our main sites, there are still a lot of our people there. There are probably three thousand people. If we include the several people from other areas and even the cadres, we have a total of about four thousand people. A pity that some c*nts defected to other gangs. Otherwise, we can at least reach nine thousand people.”

Lei Yin flatly said: “When the tree falls, the foxes scatter; It is a normal phenomenon. There is no difference in operating a company and running a gang. If the company is going to fail, of course, the employees want to find another way out. For us to gather these many people is already exceed my expectation. What about the situations in the areas that we have abandoned?”

Rei Li proudly said: “Those sons of b*tches, they don’t need us to incite trouble. Hearing that the Black Dragon is withdrawing from the area, they were like a pack of hungry mad dogs, rushing to bite each other up; It saves us a lot of trouble.”

Lei Yin thought for a moment and then said: “That’s not enough, tell our brothers in those areas to provoke them. The more they fight each other the more it will help our plan.”

Rei Li picked up an Apple and took a bite, “No problem. We just need to send a few killers to kill some of them and they will bite each other even harder.”

“Where is Chang’an?”

“He said he is trying to think of a way to quietly bring those people here, they will probably arrive tomorrow night.”

“Very good, now we just need to wait for the opening ceremony.” Lei Yin laid down the newspaper, picked up the teacup, and slowly took a sip.

Rei Li's eyes revealed a look of excitement.

—

For several days, the police departments in Los Angeles, Pittsburg, Chicago, Washington D.C, Philadelphia, New York, and other big cities were bruised and battered.

Because in less than a week's time, almost every day there were street shootings and bombings because of turf wars between gangs.

And these are turf wars between major gangs to compete for territory, all of which originally belong to the Black Dragon, who, in just several days, seemed to vanish into thin air.

Although most of the members were still stationed in the various branches of the companies that appear to be legally registered, none of them tried to control the outside gangs that were trying to rob them of their sites.

Without a strong repression force, more and more gangs joined the ranks of the competition. Because, all along, the sites that were occupied by the Black Dragons are the prime locations in major cities, it can be said that every inch of their land worth in gold, and that was why all the gangs wanted to carve up as many pieces as they can from this super fat area.

At this time, more and more people began to believe the local rumor that said the Black Dragon was about to withdraw from the United States.

Although the police have deployed some of their officers from calmer states to help quell the deterioration of events, with the mysterious killing of a few important people in the gangs, things began to lose control. From pure competition for interest, the gang wars have evolved into competition for interest plus hatred, which turned it into a battle royal.

Now every day one can read in the newspaper about these turf wars. And as time passed, the situation has become increasingly

fierce, some states have even suffered several bomb explosions, and the number of casualties was increasing day by day. Almost on a daily basis, the Police Departments in those areas that were hit received phone calls from terrified citizens. More and more opinion piece in the newspapers condemned the Government and the efficiency of the relevant departments.

Relatives to other areas, Washington D.C., Philadelphia and New York were calmer.

Historically, the number of gangs in these areas were lower than the other. Moreover, because these are the few most important cities in the United States, the police forces here were sufficient.

Even so, street shootings between gangs still happen from time to time. But, compared to other cities, the size is slightly smaller.

Things have gone to this point, even ordinary citizens also felt the disturbing atmosphere that seemed to be floating in the air.

But this relative sense of calm was broken four days later at night.

Chapter 209 - Electricity

For any City, the electrical system is very important. If there is a City-wide power outage, there will be all sorts of harms caused by many unintended variables.

Nine years ago, there was a massive power failure accident in the Northeastern parts of the United States, eight midwest states, and the province of Ontario in Canada. According to the preliminary statistic, in New York, Detroit, Cleveland, Ottawa, Toronto and other major cities and their surrounding areas, fifty million people were affected. Of which, manufacturing, food and beverage, retail, as well as the aviation industry suffered the most. Most of the economic activity appeared to be stagnated. All of these directly or indirectly caused an economic loss of up to \$30 billion.

And tonight, once again there were widespread power outages in Los Angeles, Pittsburgh, Washington, Philadelphia, New York and other major cities.

Although the blackout was smaller than the one happened a few years ago, went major cities in the United States went into darkness, some abnormal sound rang out.

After one hour of the blackout, the residents living in the fifth avenue, New York were the first to hear the gunshots. Before those shooters were taken care of, a burst of even more unexpected sounds of explosions rang out.

Not just in New York, the residents in other cities affected by the outage have also heard the persistent gunshots and explosions.

In all major streets, many large stores were forced open, the ATMs were also pounded by mobs, but the jewelry stores were the favorite. In order to open the doors of the shops or stores, some even directly crashed cars into it.

No one knew why these people became like this. But a few people

living not far from large Malls or banks saw that not long after the electricity went out, the ATMs in the malls suddenly exploded without any warning. After the explosions, the Mall doors were burst open, giving way to the flying cash from the exploded ATMs to scatter like leaves. Seeing all this cash, as well as free access to major shopping Malls, many people went crazy.

They began to frantically grab the cash on the ground or flock inside the Mall to steal precious commodities.

Not only that, as more and more shopping Malls with ATMs were burst open, the craziness spread among the crowds like an unknown virus. Not only people on the streets, even ordinary citizens ran out of their houses and joined the ranks of the robber. Some of the men, unsatisfied with the items that they robbed, began to hit other stores and shops.

Under this crazy herd mentality, more and more people began to participate in the destruction and looting.

In the dark environment, all of the looters have an illusion, that is, no one would recognize them. Thinking that their behaviors were reasonably concealed, the dark side of humanity began to rise to the surface.

In the end, the greedy crowds turned into mobs, damaging and looting stores and shops.

In addition to ordinary citizens, the gangsters who lived in the dark were like fishes in the water. Some people began to loot the gun store.

Men with guns started to rob ordinary people, or they just simply crashed cars into stores or use guns to break open the doors to loot more efficiently.

But before long, endless police vehicles gradually left the outside area and began to enter the inner city to suppress these people.

Constant roaring of sirens scared the ordinary looters; They

immediately scattered to escape.

Under the guidance from the helicopter above, dozens of police vehicles successfully drove and laid siege hundreds of armed men.

“You have been surround, put down your arms and surrender immediately.” A police officer shouted through a megaphone from a helicopter above.

Looking at the numerous police vehicles flashing red and blue lights in front of them, the surrounded men began to be afraid. Although many of them were gang members or socially marginalized people, it did not mean that they are not afraid to die.

“I repeat, you have been surrounded, immediately lay down your weapons and put your hands above your head, otherwise we will shoot.” A warning sound came from the helicopter once again.

Finally, some people began to lower their weapons and held up their hands. Seeing this, other people began to follow, laying down their weapons and holding up their hands.

Seeing more and more people laying down their weapons, the surrounding police breathed a sigh of relief.

But just when everyone thought things were over, a ten fists-size long object with ‘fireworks’ spray on its tail quietly flew at a breakneck speed toward the helicopter.

“Boom,” The helicopter was suddenly caught fire and blew apart in mid-air and finally fell on top of two police cars, causing a more intense explosion.

This sudden explosion caught all the people off guard; all of them froze. Many police who stood nearby did not have the time to react and was instantly killed by the shockwave of the explosion. Others were killed on the spot by the flame and debris.

When everyone thought that they were in a nightmare, suddenly several semi-elliptical black objects were flown from that group of men with guns toward the police cars.

When one of the police who just crawled up from the ground looked at that strange objects that landed in front of him, his face immediately went pale.

“Boom, boom....” Several successive massive explosions destroyed the police vehicles.

The surrounded gun-toting men could not believe their eyes as they saw several police cars were overturned in that chain of explosions. Many police were flung into mid air or blown into flesh and blood.

The flame of explosions and the wave of hot air made the area turned into a purgatory.

After these explosions, a more alarming scene emerged. The police who were spared from the explosions began to shoot those armed men.

Seeing that people next to them were being shot, the other men instinctively returned fire.

Nobody realized how could it turn like this. After the explosions, in quick succession, everyone lost their normal thinking capacity. Everyone wanted to eliminate the enemy in front of them to survive. With continuous fire from both sides, many of the men with guns began to look for cover as they shot back. Meanwhile, the police desperately called out their headquarters for support.

Because of the insufficient manpower in the police force, this predatory behavior continued to happen in many areas. The shooting on the street intensified and more and more police from the outer areas joined the fighting ranks.

Shootings and explosions could be heard everywhere. The whole City seemed to become a dark battlefield. Everyone went crazy, and the whole City went mad.

Not only in the City, other populated areas that were affected by the outage also suffered similar looting and shooting on the streets.

In addition to the car lights, flares and the occasional strange flash of glow from the outside, the City remained dark, but not calm.

There were battlefields everywhere. The reporters who went to report cannot believe that the scene on the ground looked like a war scene.

“Can you tell me what exactly is happening? Speak!” The Colonel’s blue veins were very visible as he pounded the stack of reports in front of the Lieutenant Colonel, the Intelligent Officer, and several other officials’ faces. Their faces were pale and no one dared to say anything.

Seeing this, the Colonel was about to explode in anger but at this time, the telephone on his desk suddenly rang.

“Who is this? Yes, I am sorry, I don’t know that it’s you. I was just berating my subordinates, please forgive my previous tone of voice.”

“I understand, I will arrange it according to your instruction.”

After he hung up the phone, the Colonel coldly stared at them and said: “All of you get out, right now.”

After they went out, the Colonel immediately picked up the phone and dialed up.

Around 2 AM, the chaos in the City has yet to subside even a little bit, people can still hear the sound of gunfire and explosion from time to time. In each area, the police station has run out of back up, all have been involved in the crackdown. But with respect to the looters and the rioting crowd, the police has considerable disadvantages in number. Therefore, they failed to control the situation. Moreover, the surrounding darkness increased the difficulty in controlling the situation. The police did not dare to send another helicopter to circle the sky anymore because several helicopters have been hit by rockets from one of the corners of the

street, which then exploded and crashed.

However, when a group of camouflaged, heavily armored soldiers came into these Cities in batches, the situation immediately changed drastically.

Under the combined sieged of well-trained soldiers with heavy firepower, the rioters and looters with guns who previously have the upper hand immediately scattered in all directions. The marauding men have been effectively deterred. Many people, upon seeing the siege from soldiers in camouflage fatigues, stood up and raised their hands to surrender.

In the Southern part of Dover, not far from Philadelphia, there was a piece of continuous ten miles bay with a natural reserve. In the Northern part of this conservation district, there were ten inconspicuous yet big military base buildings.

Among all the military personnel who were sent to Philadelphia to suppress the riots there, one fifth of them came from this base. This military base is less than 100 km away from Dover Air Force Base, which was responsible for transporting the soldiers to assist the repression.

“What is the current situation?” At the basement office in this military base, a Lieutenant General-ranked man sitting in a chair asked a young aide in front of him. The young adjutant immediately replied: “Report General, just a moment ago, all three team leaders have given their reports. The center area of Philadelphia and its urban district have been successfully controlled by us, most of the looters and rioters have been arrested by the local police.”

“What happened with Major General White and Lieutenant General Hans over there?”

“Five minutes ago, Major General White’s troops have entered the second area. As for Lieutenant General Hans’ troops, they are still in the transport aircraft, it will probably take them another

fifteen minutes to arrive.”

The Lieutenant General sneered, “I don’t know what are those police doing that they need our army to suppress it. The numbers of dead and wounded are none of our business.”

The aide said: “General, this time’s riot is very strange. Besides the 1992 Los Angeles riot, there have been no such large scale and serious riots in the United States.”

The Lieutenant General nodded his head, “Perhaps this is even bigger than that. I suspect that someone incited this riot from behind.”

“General, do you think the terrorist is behind this?”

“It probably is, after all, the United States have a lot of enemies. But this is the work of Intelligence Department, it has nothing to do with us, we only need to execute our command.”

Seeing the Lieutenant General’s somewhat tired look, the aide did not say anything anymore and ask to be excused. After all, they were all awakened in their sleep by the telephone at night.

When the aide went out, the Lieutenant General, no longer able to resist his strong feeling of sleepiness, walked to the nearby couch and laid down. After an indeterminate amount of time later, a burst of vigorous knocking sound woke him up. When he opened his eyes, he found that the room was dark.

“General, General Matt.” The aide shouted from the outside the door. The Lieutenant General groped in the dark toward the door. When he opened the door, the adjutant emotionally said, “General, our base is under attack.”

“What did you say?” The Lieutenant General could not believe his ears.

“General, our base is really under attack. The other is a group of mysterious men in black, we don’t know how they come in. They blew up our generators and backup power supply. Right now, our

base is completely out of power.”

The Lieutenant General calmed himself down and asked: “How many people are they?”

“I don’t know, a conservative estimate put them at more than three hundred people. Each have powerful weapons in hands. Three areas and two areas’ doors have been forced open by rocket launchers. Moreover, from the smoothness of their actions, they should be equipped with night vision goggles.”

“How many men do we have in this base?”

“Because most of our people went to Philadelphia to suppress the riots, our base fighting personnel is less than two hundred people, the rest is logistic personnel about fifty people. Those men in black are moving toward the basement.”

The Lieutenant General was startled, “Immediately concentrate our people in the basement, we must stand our ground there. We absolutely cannot let them enter the level three basement. Also, immediately seek support from the outside.”

The aide’s face fell as he said: “General, we have no way to look for outside help now, because those people had succeeded in occupying the communication rooms in the second building and our weapon’s arsenal. I just tried to send a signal for help, but the signal transmission device that was mounted outside has been destroyed by them so we have no way to send signals to the outside. They know our communication method and communication facilities.”

Hearing his words, the Lieutenant General’s whole body shook. If all of these were true, then they have been completely isolated. This was obviously a carefully planned attack.

After a while, the Lieutenant General’s deep voice sounded in the dark: “No matter what happens, we must defend the lowest underground level, we absolutely cannot let them enter there.

Since the communication facilities cannot be used, we need to create a huge explosion to attract other people's attention. All right, let's go." With that, he went out of the room with his aide.

Chapter 210 - The Third Layer

“Headquarters, this is the third squad responsible for the suppression of Old City Philadelphia. I am Captain Robert, right now the entire Old City has been in our control. The local police have also arrested of the gunmen. What should we do next? We ask headquarters for a new instruction.”

“This is the headquarters, I am the correspondent on duty. You’ve worked hard Captain Robert. Now I will transmit Lieutenant General Matt’s latest order. He asks you to assist the local the local police in maintaining order in the Old City, implement an uninterrupted patrol, and eliminate the dangerous people with guns who loot other people.”

“I understand, I will carry out the instruction.” After hanging up the phone, the Captain directed his team to help the police maintain the law and order.

On the other hand, after giving out the order, the correspondent’s trembling hand took off his headphone.

“Tie his hands.” The man in black who pointed a gun at him said to the other man in black next to him.

That man in black immediately handcuffed the correspondent’s hands behind the chair.

“Who are you really? Do you know what you are doing now....” Before he finished, the man in black has taped his mouth with plastic seal.

The man in black with a gun said to the other two correspondents who were similarly tied in a chair and mouth sealed up: “Don’t play any tricks, I don’t mind killing the two of you. Because one should be enough.”

Knowing that these people were cold-blooded, the several correspondents’ eyes were filled with horror. They still can’t

believe that the entire military base was actually occupied.

Because of the riots in Philadelphia tonight, all the combatants in the base took up their weapons and went to assist the suppression. They lacked both, the manpower and firepower to fight back. But also because things happened so suddenly and they were surrounded by darkness, thus they were beaten from the start.

By contrast, those men in black carried a lot of fire powers, many of them have rocket launchers, which they fired directly at the base. They also have grenades and machine guns. The battle was lopsided from the start.

In less than ten minutes, hundreds of black-clad men have used their overwhelming firepower to break through the military base second level basement. The rest of the men in black stayed outside to prevent people from fleeing to look for help, or go into hiding and escaped unpunished.

The usually dignified face of the Lieutenant General was now covered with dust and looked awkward. In this narrow environment, a good commander displayed his capability by using two submachine guns simultaneously. If he did not see it himself, he would not know that the enemy could be this fierce. Their wave after wave of powerful attacks prevented them from catching a breath. Their more than two hundred soldiers were now less than sixty.

By this time, he knew that they have basically lost. If he continued to resist any longer it would only add unnecessary casualties.

But he dared not ordered the surrender. Because he knew how important are the things at the lowest level.

If these people took them away, the consequence would be something that he cannot possibly bear.

“General, we can hold them off for the time being, please give the

order to withdraw.” An embarrassed aide loudly said.

“Very well, immediately withdraw to the lower level.” Without any other choice, the General had to nod.

Thus, the surviving fifty people made a suppressing fire as they took turns to withdraw to the third level.

The third layer was much spacious than the layers above it, and it also has an independent power generator system. Therefore, this was the only place that still has light. After entering the electronic door, without the being ordered, the adjutant immediately operated the access control to close the door.

After seeing the huge metal gate slowly went down, the Lieutenant General slightly relieved.

“General Matt, what’s going on out there? Is there a fire?” At this time, some people around 40 to 60 years of age in white lab gowns came over and asked in surprised.

“Dr. Seth, our base is under attack by some unknown men in black, they are forcing their way here.” General Matt said to the old man at the front.

“What? Isn’t this a military base? How could such a thing happen here?” Those few people could not help but alarmed.

General Matt wryly smiled, he also hoped that this was just a nightmare. In here, in addition to waiting for the reinforcement, there was nothing they can do, they have nowhere else to go. He had fought in Vietnam War, but even in such a brutal war, he has never been in such a passive situation like this.

“General Matt, who are they?” Seth continued to ask.

“I don’t know. What I do know is that they are a group of heavily armed men dressed in black. Unfortunately, our people went to Philadelphia to suppress the riots there. Otherwise, we would not be in this situation.” The Lieutenant General was even more certain that these riots have something to do with those men in

black.

“General, they seemed to have stopped firing.” The adjutant came over and said.

“What are they trying to do?” The Lieutenant General frowned.

The adjutant said with a pale face: “Perhaps they want to explode the way in.”

Dr. Seth and the others suddenly went pale.

General Matt calmly said: “This underground lab was designed to withstand the nuclear explosion on the ground. Unless they use hundreds of kilograms of TNT explosives, otherwise they would not be able to blast their way in.”

But before he finished, all of a sudden, they heard several “bang” sound and the air vents were forced open. Subsequently, seven or eight can-like stuff dropped from above.

The Lieutenant General, seeing that the thick concentration of smoke continued to emerge from that can-like stuff, immediately went pale and shouted: “It’s a sleeping gas, quickly throw them out.”

When several soldiers rushed over to pick those can-like things, suddenly a semi-elliptical object was thrown at them.

“It’s a grenade, take cover.” One of the soldiers shouted and jumped to the side.

With a loud “bang” sound, the explosion forced all the people to roll to the side. Several soldiers near the explosion were covered with blood and horribly mangled.

Seeing the experiment room was like a battlefield, the Lieutenant General knew that it was all over for them.

As the anesthetic gas continued to spread, his people soon lost their movement. But at this time, nobody called out for help, they were just waiting with fear of what happened next.

Five minutes later, several men in black wearing gas masks jumped down from the vents. Armed with assault rifles, they coldly watched the people sitting on the ground.

“We surrender, please don’t kill us.” Feebly leaning against the wall, the Lieutenant General weakly said.

One of the men in black signaled the others, who then immediately started to collect the weapons from the Lieutenant General and his soldiers, and then guarded them.

That man in black then bent down and asked one of the researchers who was sitting on the floor: “How to open the door?”

Looking at the pistol that was against his abdomen, the researcher immediately spelled out the password in quivering voice.

When the door slowly rose, a large group of similarly dressed men came in from the outside.

The one commanding the men in black said to the man in black who was walking in: “Do according to the plan.”

That man nodded and immediately called several of his men to grab one those researchers.

“Don’t kill me, I am just a researcher here, this has nothing to do with me.” That fellow loudly begged for mercy.

“As long as you cooperate, I will not kill you. Now take us to the archive and storage area.”

Hearing this, the Lieutenant General’s face suddenly changed, They really come for those things.

However, even though he knew that, he has absolutely no way to stop them.

At this time, the commander of the men in black walked over to Dr. Seth and said: “Now take me to your lab. Remember, don’t play any tricks, my gun is very easy to fire.”

With a pale face, Dr. Seth took the several men in black to the laboratory.

Just before leaving, that man in black said to the other men in black: "If there is any suspicious movement, immediately execute on the spot."

"Yes."

After opening the electronic door using his fingerprints, Dr. Seth took them to the central laboratory.

The lab was large. It has the size of a half football field. The inside was filled with all kinds of devices and biological specimens soaked in formalin.

The leading man in black carefully looked at those specimens and saw that there were several orangutans, apes, and monkeys.

Among them, chimpanzees have the largest number. But in the innermost row, there were ten samples, and all of them were human bodies. There were men and women of all colors and races. The most shocking were the two Asian and Black teenager's bodies. Floating inside this anti-rot liquid with a strange color, their eyes were slightly opened, seemingly wanting to tell about something. He also found that their surface tissues were abnormal, but he did not know if those were from births or not.

Turning around to look at Dr. Seth, that man in black said: "Immediately turn on the central computer, we need to copy some data." He knew that the data here was encrypted. If they did not open it by using the identification system, even if they forcefully took the hard drive, they would have no way to open it.

Hearing this, Dr. Seth's face became even more ugly. He was very clear how confidential the data here is. If other people knew that he was the one who leaked it, even if he was being forced, he could not escape the responsibility.

Seemingly knowing what he was thinking, that man coldly said:

“You have no choice. If you don’t cooperate, we will kill you and simply ask another person.”

Dr. Seth turned on the several computers next to the laboratory and entered the password at the login screen. One man in black brought two laptops and connected them to the main computer.

The nearby man in black looked at the information on another computer.

“Give your authority to open it.” The man black that was holding the notebook said to Dr. Seth.

Dr. Seth knew that he has no way to stop them and had to give his authority to open the file. The man in black closely stared at his action.

After a while, watching the constant copying of data, Dr. Seth felt a burst of bitterness in his throat. Even if these people did not kill him, the military people here would not let him off, at the very least, he would be imprisoned.

“How long will it take?” The leading man asked.

That man in black holding the laptop said: “Looking at the size of the file, we may need to wait for half an hour.”

The man frowned, “Is it that long? Nevermind, try to speed things up. You, open that.” He pointed at the vault-like metal door and said to Dr. Seth.

Although he already knew that this was an inevitable situation, Dr. Seth still cannot help but tremble.

Seeing his hesitant look, that man became impatient, “Hurry up. Don’t let me repeat the second times.”

After opening that heavy door, that man found that there was another metal door inside.

“What’s inside?”

“It’s a cold storage.”

“I ask you what’s inside?”

“The original experimental bodies.”

The origin? The man did not think much, immediately ordered Dr. Seth to open that metal door.

The inside was indeed a cold storage. But there was nothing special to it, it’s just that, at the center of it, there were many cabinets. It was like a morgue cabinet.

The man pointed at Dr. Seth with a pistol and said: “Open it.”

With a pale face, Dr. Seth pulled one of the cabinets, revealing something that was wrapped in a plastic membrane.

Then, with trembling hands, he opened the zipper on that plastic membrane. After unzipping it, a surge of white cold air rose from the inside.

Seeing the thing inside, the man widened his eyes in surprise.

“What is that thing?” The man loudly asked.

Dr. Seth said with a lifeless voice: “It’s the mysterious being in the Roswell incident that the military called as ‘the coming.’”

The man could not help but took a deep breath and, after a while, said: “So to speak, fifty years ago, that rumor is true?”

“Yes.” Dr. Seth lowered his head and said.

On July 4, 1947, a suspicious unidentified object crashed at a ranch near Roswell, New Mexico, USA. The next day, a farmer 120 kilometers away from Roswell found metal objects scattered along 400 meters on a farm. Later he took the metal fragments and brought them over to a sheriff who then handed them to the Air Force base. The Air Force then sent Major Mathil and another officer to examine the scene.

They loaded a bunch of things back to the base for inspection.

At the same time, a civil engineer Gnady L who worked nearby

found several oddly shaped corpses wearing gray tights scattered on the ground. When the Air Force received the news, they immediately blocked the area and removed the bodies away.

Here's the really weird thing, a few days later the newspaper published that the Air Force claimed to have discovered a flying saucer on a ranch near Roswell, but soon, the newspaper clarified that the crashed object was just a conventional weather balloon. However, there were many witnesses, including senior military officers and well-known public figures, who claimed that they all have seen the flying saucer fell on the ranch.

Just a few years ago the US military published reports disclosing the true nature of the crashed aircraft, a surveillance balloon from Project Mogul. In the reports, this project mogul has nothing to do with aliens but a purely military intelligence project to spy on the Soviet Union. It was reported that the Roswell residents did not suffer from vertigo and they did see a flying saucer-like object. But the military said that it was just a saucer-like space probe used for supersonic experiments. And those "alien corpses" that were recovered by the military were nothing more than the experimental high altitude escape dummies.

This explanation received many criticisms, accusing the military of deliberately concealing and falsifying evidence to deceive the world.

Now, in front of that man's eyes, the thing that he saw inside this 'morgue' cabinet was very similar to the evidence fifty years ago.

A humanoid corpse, yet thin and small. The whole bare body was covered with a yellowish-gray skin. The height is only one hundred centimeters. The head – which was long, big and slightly flattened – was without any hair. The facial features were also similar to human, except that the eyes were very large, which if fully opened would probably account for one-fifth of the whole face. The mouth was very small and without any teeth.

At first sight, the whole body was like a deformed child with progeria.

The man turned to Dr. Seth and said: “How many more of this?”

“There are a total of five, three of which have been dissected and used for experiments.”

The man wanted to ask a follow-up question but a man in black suddenly came and said: “Your excellency, the three is in a hurry to find you.”

“I know.” The man took Dr. Seth outside with him.

Chapter 211 - File

After walking out of that cold storage, Lei Yin went to the man in black who was reading the information on the computer and asked: “What is it?”

That man in black pointed to the file on the computer screen and said: “Your excellency, look at these classified documents.”

After reading several documents in a hurry, Lei Yin suddenly understood a lot of things.

He immediately turned, walked toward Dr. Seth and pointed a gun at his head: “Come with me.”

After leading Dr. Seth back again to the cold storage, Lei Yin suddenly said: “How do you know about the site?”

“I don’t understand what you mean?”

Seeing his seemingly genuine expression, Lei Yin guessed that he may really not know. After all, he’s just a researcher and would usually only responsible for researching.

After thinking for a bit, Lei Yin asked another question, “What are you researching about?”

Dr. Seth gave him a look and then lowered his head, “We are trying to combine the alien gene and human gene to see what would be the outcome. Actually, this research began fifty years ago, but the technology was still far behind so the research has been at a standstill. Knowing that in recent years there have been unprecedented developments in gene science, the military restarted this program.”

“So to say, you guys let the Japanese government to secretly develop the heterologous gene fusion technology, am I right?”

“Yes. In order to accelerate the research progress, the military let the Japanese side to participate in the program. They are

responsible for developing the heterologous gene fusion technology and we are responsible for activating the alien cell, enabling them to fuse with the human gene.”

Knowing this, Lei Yin finally understood why the Japanese government will carry out that kind of research. This is one of his long-standing questions. Although the combination of human and the beast has a very strong body, in this era of proliferation of arms, if they use those monsters as a biological weapon in the real battlefield, their role would be minimal. Basically, shooting them from a helicopter hovering in mid-air is enough to kill them. But if they were just used as experimental objects, then all of that can be explained.

Lei Yin thought for a moment and then asked: “Are those corpses of human and orangutan out there the results of the failed experiment?”

“Yes. Most of those people are illegal immigrants, there is also a few death row prisoners. They were brought to us by the military so that we can do our experiment.” Dr. Seth did not dare to look at his face.

“Is there a successful experiment?”

Hearing this question, Dr. Seth’s eyes flashed a trace of excitement, “Yes. So far, there are nine survivors. All of them have various kind of change. As we previously speculated, the alien is a highly evolved race. Not only their technology far exceed us, humans, the communication between them should be carried out through brain waves. This can be seen by the obvious devolution of their mouth. Following the successful gene fusion, the few originally ordinary human subjects became people with psychic power or espers. Moreover, their psionic ability is much stronger than the ordinary espers. This result surprised us as well.”

Seeing this mad scientist face, Lei Yin wanted to shoot him.

Not wanting to waste time, Lei Yin told his men to bind Dr. Seth

and then briskly walked out of the experiment room.

He went to those soldiers whose hands and feet have been cuffed and pulled up Lieutenant General Matt.

His body was still weak so Lei Yin almost had to carry him up.

After bringing him into an empty room, Lei Yin coldly looked at him, “You guys do every possible means to catch Rei Li in order to find the whereabouts of the site from his mouth, is it not?”

The Lieutenant General looked at him in surprise and after a while said: “How do you know this thing?”

“I have read those information. Now I am asking you, how did you make the Black Dragon member who knew about the site give out the information to you?”

The Lieutenant General feebly said: “If I tell you, you have to promise not to kill us.”

Lei Yin’s dark pupils were focused at him and then nodded, “I promise you that I will not kill all of you.”

Although he did not know whether the opposite party will keep his words or not, holding this glimmer of hope, the Lieutenant General said: “Three years ago, those people destroyed our experiment site off the coast of New York. Moreover, they also took a number of very important classified documents. In order to get the information back from their hands, we caught several of their core members to get useful information from them. When interrogating one of the members, we were surprised to learn that he was involved in the excavation of the remains.”

Lei Yin interrupted him: “How did you know that what he excavated is a remain?” He remembered that Rei Li once said that the members who participate in the excavation did not enter the site, so they should not know what was inside.

“He also did not know what it is, but under hypnosis, he drew out the pattern of the surface of that thing. That pattern is exactly the

same as the pattern on the surface of the flying saucer that crashed in Roswell. Thus we concluded that the remain should be another flying saucer that crashed on Earth.”

“Did he say if, in addition to Rei Li, there is someone else entered the remain?” Even with Lei Yin’s cultivation, in asking this question, he cannot help but nervously sweat. For him, this is one of the fatal problems. If that member spilled out his name then all the people that have close relationships with him in Japan would be in a very dangerous situation.

At this time, the Lieutenant General replied: “Besides knowing that what he excavated is another flying saucer, we did not get other information because he suddenly woke up in the middle of hypnosis. He was finally gunned down by our people when he forcefully tried to escape.”

“Why is that?” Lei Yin immediately asked a follow-up question.

“That member was very tenacious. We managed to put him in the hypnosis state with the help of drugs, but when the hypnosis time was only half, he suddenly woke up. We don’t know why he can wake up, we have never encountered such a thing.”

Lei Yin finally felt relieved, he knew that the Lieutenant General did not lie to him. He knew why that member suddenly woke up in the middle of hypnosis. That’s because each dark group member has undergone the drug-resistance training. Therefore they have much more resistance to anesthesia or unconscious-induced types of drugs than ordinary people.

“You guys want to catch Rei Li in order to get the whereabouts of the remain from his mouth?”

“Yes.”

So that’s why. No wonder Lei Yin thought that in the previous encounters, when they were pursuing Rei Li, they seemed to have a reservation. It turned out they did not want to accidentally kill Rei

Li.

Lei Yin suddenly changed the topic, “From my questions, I believe you already know who we are, right?” read this at subudai11 – support the translator

Hearing him said this, the Lieutenant General became dejected, “Didn’t you just promise not to kill us?”

“I promise I won’t kill you, but I didn’t promise not to call someone else to kill you. You know too much. If you are me, I believe you will do the same thing.” With that, he walked out of the room.

The enraged Lieutenant General cursed his back. If not for his hands that were handcuffed, he would have pounced on Lei Yin and stake it all.

Arriving outside, Lei Yin saw that Rei Li has returned, along with the other ten men in black, each of them carried a large backpack filled with things.

Coming close to Rei Li, Lei Yin asked: “How’s it going?”

Rei Li replied: “I’ve copied all of their files and experimental videos. What have you found?”

“Some unexpected things, I’ll slowly tell you when we get out. Have you placed the explosives?”

“I have. From here to above, they’re everywhere. Initially, I was worried that our explosives are not going to be enough, but I found a lot of good things in their arsenal, which definitely can blow this place into pieces.” Rei Li was very excited.

Seeing the watch on his hand, he found that it was already four o’clock in the morning.

At dawn, many sleeping residents of Dover were awakened by the sound of a huge explosion. The shock wave from the explosion shattered many window glasses on many houses.

Nobody knew what happened. Some people thought that it was an earthquake, but after seeing the distance plume of flame, most people thought that it was an oil tanker explosion.

After the explosion, the residents saw the stream of fire trucks, as well as military vehicles going in the direction of the reservation.

The multiple simultaneous riots in the city and this awe-inspiring explosion lulled the people into a false sense of impending war. Restless and confusion continued to spread in the crowd.

On the other hand, the military also entered the state of emergency preparedness. An endless number of soldiers dressed in camouflage fatigue continued to board the transport planes or vehicles into the city to impose the martial law.

Seeing this, the people became increasingly worried. Many people thought that they were really in a war and began to pack their valuables in panic.

Who would have thought that a few hours ago everything was quiet, as usual? But after several hours, it actually turned into the current condition.

Tonight, the vast majority of people suffered from insomnia.

Two hundred nautical miles off the coast of Boston, two medium-sized ocean-going ferryboats was taking advantage of the night to quietly leave the United States.

Each of the two ferries only has a Captain, a chief officer, eight shipping workers and four lifeboats. For a conventional medium-sized ocean-going ferryboat, this was far from the minimum security standard. But a smuggler vessel like this did not need to consider this factor. After all, for smugglers, the illegal immigrants in the cabin brought more trouble than good.

But these usually fierce smugglers did not dare to do anything to those sitting and drinking in the cabin. For fear that they would

fail to serve these mysterious men.

In the Captain's room, a man in his forties is now very depressed and filled with regret.

Last week when he talked about the price to the man, he was so happy that he almost died on the spot. He never imagined that smuggling ship out of the United States could get such a big deal. And the other party later said that they will increase the price, but he must add another ship. So he immediately contacted another smuggler.

However, at the agreed place and time, he never thought that the passenger would be a terrifying group of heavily armed masked men.

The head smuggler wanted to vomit blood in regret but dared not refuse them on board. Because he could not imagine the consequences of refusing them. His acquaintance was also scared and could not wait to come and kill him. But what can he do? He just hoped that these people would do nothing to him.

In the cabin's reception room, there were more than ten men in business suits or casual wear sitting in it. Six people's age between 40 and 60. The rest were young people about the same age as Rei Li.

Rei Li put his face mask down and said: "Everybody should have been very clear about our current situation. I can say that now the Black Dragon is in its most difficult period. But as long as we can safely leave the United States, with our accumulated funds and connections, it is not difficult to stage a comeback. We have only lost the United States territory."

A 50-something, gray-haired man stood up and said: "You are the leader of the Black Dragon, of course we will implement your orders, even the incitement project in various cities. But our losses are too great. Until now I still do not understand why the United States want to f*ck the Black Dragon. I hope you can give us a

reasonable explanation.”

Rei Li solemnly said: “Uncle Jian, you should know that three years ago there was an organization that wanted to swallow the Black Dragon, right?”

The man frowned and said: “Of course I remember this incident, those sons’ of turtles blew up several of our divisions, my division in California was destroyed by them. Don’t tell me that those people are military?”

Rei Li somewhat helplessly said: “Yes, you guessed it right, the military is indeed behind the research organization. In order to raise the research fund, they wanted to swallow the Black Dragon. At that time, we even fought directly against a bunch of them.”

A man in his thirty with a deep scar on his left cheek said, “Why did you not mention this in the report that you gave us?”

Chang’an, who has been silent all this time, coldly said: “Liu Yun, please watch your tone, do not forget who you are talking to.”

Liu Yun gave Chang’an a glance and resentfully stopped talking.

Rei Li smoothed things out by saying: “Uncle Yun, please do not misunderstand. In fact, I knew nothing about this some time ago. If I knew the military is targeting us, I would’ve withdraw from the United States three years ago, and will not wait until now.”

Since Rei Li gave him a step and the explanation was very reasonable, Liu Yun’s face softened.

A middle-aged man dressed in casual wear lit a cigarette and then said: “This time we’ve made such a big disturbance, they won’t let us. Even though you can leave the United States, future troubles are certainly not going to be less. I don’t know what do you plan to do with that?”

Rei Li said: “After knowing that the opponent are the military, me and Chang’an laid down this plan. We want to stir up riots in various states to distract the military’s attention and then storm

into their experimental base. My ultimate goal is to get the evidence and information regarding those shady experiments. With these things, we should be able to give them fear, on the other hand, it will also let us take advantage of the chaos to leave the United States.”

“Are those information important enough to make them stop?” The eyes of an old fat man, who wore a traditional clothing, revealed a suspicious look.

“It’s hard to say, but the information is certainly very important. They will probably get us into trouble in the future. But they should only do it in secret and not as blatant as regarding us as a terrorist organization. Therefore, you guys need to be careful in the future.”

The others said no more, each revealing a thoughtful expression.

Seeing that the crowd did not make any sound, Rei Li turned around and asked the 30-something young man, “Have you safely evacuated your people?”

That man answered: “Yes, boss. After the riots, I have arranged them to leave by cars, they should reach Montreal tomorrow.”

After asking several other people, the ten men finally left the room.

After they left, Lei Yin came out from the nearby small door.

He mused: “So many years I haven’t seen them, they are a lot older now. I still remember when they were young.”

Rei Li said: “Master, are you really not going to talk to uncle Shu and the others?”

Lei Yin shook his head: “No need, for them, I am just a dead man, now they are not Yan Yuxiao’s men anymore.”

After being silent for a moment, he then said: “If they are too much trouble, just let them retire and send them back.”

Rei Li quickly said: “Master, I don’t have the means.”

Lei Yin waved his hand and said: “They’re troublesome old men because they want to flaunt their seniority. The so-called the young court councilor needs to look up, you should know about this truth. Now you are in charge of the Black Dragon, you should try to nurture your own trusted right-hand men rather than defer to old sentiment and lower your own prestige. For me, managing a gang is no different than running a company. A clear business system must not rely on bloodline or human emotion to win over the people in the company for a long time. I have said what I should have said, you think about it.”

Rei Li found that when his master said those words, there was an indescribable frustration in it.

Chang’an’ eyes became somewhat bleak, only he can clearly understand how Lei Yin felt. When that group of people changed, it means that their era has completely ended.

Although, if his excellency wants it, he can gallop again in the rivers and lakes, but the people who follow him will no longer be those people.

Those people are old, and about to die.

Chapter 212 - Transformation

“Chang’an, has master come out yet?” After passing through the door, Rei Li asked as he took off his suit.

Dressed in white casual clothing, the middle-aged man dropped the newspaper and said: “His excellency is still calmly meditating in the room.”

Rei Li cannot help but confuse, “In addition to this week, it’s nearly half a month, what kind of thing that master need to meditate about for so long?”

“Your excellency naturally has his reason. How about those things?”

Rei Li yawned, “It’s almost there. Thankfully, we have this Sweden branch, otherwise, I won’t know where to put these many people. What about you?”

“Things that need to be handled are already handled. The one they are looking for is you, but since you’ve got out, it’s been good.”

“I know, I’ve finally been able to vent out. Seeing them like that feels so good.” Rei Li showed an excited expression.

“We have given them so much trouble this time, our trouble in the future will definitely not be less. We need to adjust our future route, no longer can we act recklessly like before. At least, we need to close our arms business.”

Hearing this, Rei Li suddenly said with a bitter face: “That’s our biggest source of income, this is really a big loss.”

“Little Rei, this kind of shady business, although the profits are high, also very dangerous. It’s better to quit as soon as possible. With our current financial resources, we do not need too much money to expand. Times have changed, the real economic return only exists in the enterprise. This is why I try not to meddle in the

underworld things these recent years and concentrate on the development of the company.”

Rei Li thought for a moment and then said: “You mean, you want the Black Dragon to transform into a legitimate business?”

Chang’an nodded: “You can say so. In my opinion, the so-called turf, status in the rivers and lakes, are fake. These things are nothing more than a passing scene. What happened three years ago and now are the most obvious examples.

However, Industrial group or Company is different, as long as you hold the stock, even if other people want to snatch it away from you, they can’t. This is the universal law in the commercial world. Of course, since the Black Dragon have accumulated influence and forces over the years, it would not be easy to let them go because these things can make us do things that many legitimate companies can’t. The reason why so many underworld organizations finally meet their end is because most of their sources of income are illegal. The result is, not only would they be troubled by the one in the ‘white road,’ other gangs will stare at this piece of fat. As long as we seal this gap, by using legitimate business earnings to maintain the Black Dragon, and then prop up even more legitimate business, our Black Dragon will be in an impregnable position.”

“The one who complies with the rules of the game will always be well-received than the one who seeks to break the rules.” Along with these words, Lei Yin, still disguised as a middle-aged man, walked from the inside.

“Your excellency.” Chang’an immediately stood up.

“Master, you finally come out.” Rei Li said in surprise.

“Thank you.” Taking the teacup that was offered by Chang’an, Lei Yin slowly took a sip, and then said: “What Chang’an said is reasonable, this may be a good opportunity.”

Rei Li seriously said: “I know, I will think about it.”

Lei Yin asked: “Are everyone settled yet?”

“Yes, except for the security personnel outside, the rest have been settled. Uncle Shu, uncle Ming and the others have gone to Finland last week.”

“Your excellency, this is the news of what happened while you meditated for two weeks.” Chang’an brought a stack of newspapers.

Lei Yin casually flipped through a few of them for a while and then said: “It looks like it is similar to our initial estimate. They did not dare to tell the truth. However, they will certainly come again, we need to be ready before then.”

“This is our territory, moreover, the new dark group members are all here. This time we must f*ck them hard and blow their sshles.”

Lei Yin was silent, just gently tapping the arm of the chair with his finger.

—

“Kazumi, come with me to buy a skirt, okay? Last week, I saw a beautiful skirt in the mall, but I just felt that it’s a bit expensive so I didn’t buy it. After thinking for a long time, I finally decided to buy it. That skirt is really beautiful. You’ll know it when you see it.” Take Asasei said to her friend while tidying up the textbooks.

“I’m sorry, little Asasei, I want to go to my brother’s place to take a look and help him clean it.”

Seeing her friend’s apologetic eyes, Take Asasei patted her shoulder and said: “We’ll go out next time. Would you like me to go with you?”

Kazumi smiled: “No need, I’ll be back soon.”

As they walked outside, Take Asasei a bit worriedly asked: “Did

your brother say when he will be back? It's been almost two months, if he doesn't come back soon, his school grade would be in a very serious trouble."

"He has some things to deal with, but he should be back soon." When she talked, Kazumi's eyes were filled with worry.

In fact, she did not know when he will be back.

Since hearing the conversation between him and Sasako, she knew that the things hidden behind her brother were far beyond her original imagination. Although he just said he needed to go out to do some things, her intuition told her that those things were very dangerous.

She was really afraid, afraid that it would happen like the last time, him went missing for more than two years, or even....

Thinking to this, Kazumi felt a burst of chill, the kind of cold that passed through the deepest part of the heart.

"Kazumi, Kazumi."

Hearing her friend yelling her name, Kazumi finally woke up, "Little Asasei, what did you say?"

Take Asasei looked at her face with concern, "Are you okay? You don't look good at all."

Kazumi said with a smile: "I am fine, let's go." With that, she walked out of the classroom, book in hand.

Take Asasei cast her a glance, bit her own lips and then said: "Kazumi, are you worried about your brother?" Her friend's expression made her think back to the scene during their stay in Kagoshima.

Kazumi was about to deny that. However, upon seeing her friend's eyes that were filled with concern, her heart softened. Finally, she gently nodded.

"Do you think your brother will be in danger?" Take Asasei

instinctively asked.

Kazumi clasped the book on her bosom and then whispered: “I don’t know.” With that, she slowly walked forward.

Take Asasei looked at her back and then quietly walked up beside her.

Just as they walked out of the classroom building, a man who originally stood by the roadside walked toward Kazumi.

While walking, Kazumi, who was lowering her head thinking about things, felt that there was someone in front of her. Thus, she looked up and see the man who stood in front her; Her brow cannot help but wrinkle.

“Hello, Kazumi.” Ogata Yasuda said with a smile.

Looking at Ogata Yasuda’s handsome countenance, the face of Take Asasei who stood next to Kazumi became very unnatural.

Without saying any words, Kazumi calmly pulled Take Asasei’s hand and bypassed him from the side.

Ogata Yasuda caught up with them, blocked their way and said: “Kazumi, I would like to have a good talk with you.”

“I have nothing to talk about with you. If you can understand human language, please get out of the way.” Kazumi coldly said.

“Kazumi, I really want to have a talk with you, would you please give me a chance, okay?” Yasuda’s face showed a completely sincere expression.

Kazumi sneered, “Is this game really that interesting? Honestly, I feel bored already.”

Yasuda became excited, “This is not a game! At eight o’clock in the evening, I will wait for you at the previous restaurant. I will always be there until you are willing to see me.” Then, he turned around and walked away.

Watching his back, Kazumi’s eyes revealed a look of ridicule.

At this time, Take Asasei suddenly whispered, “Kazumi, would....would you go see him?”

The corner of Kazumi’s lips curled into a sneer; She then turned around and said to her: “Little Asasei, forget that playboy, you will find a young man who will sincerely like you.”

Take Asasei paused and then said: “Actually, in the beginning, from his eyes, I already knew that the one he likes is not me. It was just my wishful thinking that as long as I give out the effort, one day I can make him really like me. Am I stupid?”

Seeing her friend barely covered her tear-filled eyes with a smile, Kazumi could only wordlessly hold her hands.

The two of them then continued to walk on a path near the campus entrance. Three girls suddenly got down from a high-end car that stopped by the roadside and then walked up to them. A few meters away from them stood two big men who seemed to be the bodyguards.

Carefully looking at the girl with glasses in front of her, Mingyu Jizi (The frenemy of Haruko) still could not understand why Yasuda would be interested in this ordinary girl. So much so that, almost every day, he came looking for her in her part-time job.

At the beginning, she also thought Yasuda was just having fun as usual. But after two months, not only Yasuda still do the exact same thing as before every day, he did not even look for other pretty girls to play with like he used to. This unusual behavior of him finally caused Mingyu Jizi to be vigilant.

By chance, she saw the look on Yasuda’s face when he was looking at this girl in the classroom. His eyes made her feel a bit uneasy because she often saw that kind of look from the boys who followed her around. In her mind, whether it be the family background, appearance, and demeanor, Ogata Yasuda was her best future husband candidate, only he worthy to be with her. She did not mind him hanging out with other pretty girls because she

knew it was just for fun. But this seemed to be a little different; A woman is very sensitive to this kind of thing. From that day on, she felt that she might need to do some preventive measures in advance.

“What’s the matter?” Kazumi looked at the three beautiful girls, who seemed unfriendly, in front of her.

“Come with me, I have something to tell you.” Mingyu Jizi said to Kazumi.

“I don’t have much time, if you have something to say just say it here.” Kazumi dryly said.

Mingyu Jizi had an angry look in her eyes. This shameless woman!

Slightly calming her mood, she coldly said: “I don’t care what method you used on Yasuda, but I want you to stop seeing him again, you hear me? Give her the cheque.”

One of the girls who stood next to her stepped forward and handed Kazumi a cheque.

Kazumi’s mouth twitched; She pulled her slightly nervous friend’s hand and walked away from that girl.

Mingyu Jizi finally rushed up to her and loudly said: “Exactly how much do you want, tell me your price.”

Glancing at her, Kazumi flatly said: “Don’t you think that this kind of thing will only make you look bad? For such a playboy like him, is it worth it?”

Seeing Kazumi immediately walked away without waiting for her reply, Mingyu Jizi could not help but angry out of shame; She loudly said to those two bodyguards: “Give this shameless woman a lesson.”

The two bodyguards showed an awkward expression and did not know what to do.

“Didn’t you hear? I told you to give that b*tch a lesson.” Mingyu Jizi stared at those two bodyguards.

The two bodyguards had to run up to stop in front of Kazumi, not letting her go.

“Jizi, what do you want? Just forget it.” Although no bystanders were in the vicinity, one of the girls was afraid to make things big, so she loudly persuaded her.

“Just shut up!” After she swore at them, Mingyu Jizi went to the front of Kazumi and then said: “I’m gonna ask you again, do you or do you not plan to entangle Yasuda?”

Kazumi sneered: “It seems like you really need to go back to Junior High School because you have a problem with your logical thinking. If you can make that playboy to not appear in front of me, I will be very grateful to you.”

Mingyu Jizi felt humiliated, her face reddened in anger, “You poisonous b*tch. You two, give her a lesson, let her know the consequences of talking nonsense. I will assume all the responsibility.”

The two bodyguards looked at each other, and then took a step toward Kazumi. In their opinion, this bespectacled girl was but an ordinary person. As long as they did not kill or seriously injure her, by virtue of Mingyu Jizi’s family relationship with the police, they did not need to be afraid of a prosecution.

Looking at the increasingly closer two big men, Take Asasei, who stood next to Kazumi, began to be afraid, “What, what do you want to do?”

“Little Take, wait for my signal, and then quickly run away,” Kazumi whispered as she pulled her friend’s hand and moved backward.

“Weren’t you arrogant just now? How come you don’t talk, are you afraid? If you ask me, I may spare you.” Mingyu Jizi very

proudly said.

“After living in a rich man’s house for a long time, people will turn into other people’s dogs. It seems like this sentence is on point here.” Kazumi contemptuously said toward the two bodyguards.

Hearing this, the two bodyguards’ eyes flashed out an angry look.

While they were angry, Kazumi suddenly turned around and pulled Take Asasei’s hand to run away.

The two bodyguards were surprised for a moment, but they immediately chased them.

Although the two girls have tried to run, they were slower than the two bodyguards. Very quickly the two bodyguards were already five meters behind them and soon would catch up to them.

At this time, from behind came a burst of rapid footsteps. Then, four casually clothed men, each of them wore a T-shirt, rushed from behind.

When these several men run passed Mingyu Jizi, she did not know what happened. But soon, she saw a shocking scene.

She saw one of the four men threw a flying kick toward the bodyguard closest to Kazumi, kicking him down to the ground. Then, he grabbed that bodyguard’s right hand that was about to grab him and bent it backward; Followed by a crisp sounding sound, the bodyguard issued an Earth shattering scream.

In comparison, the experience of the other bodyguard was even more tragic. Because he was hit by the three men at the same time. Less than five seconds later, he was among the two men wrestled to the ground and severely kicked. Another man walked over toward Mingyu Jizi and her friends.

“What do you want?” The three paled-face girls constantly retreated.

After carefully examining the three girls for a while, the man

turned to the other three “hard-working” men and said: “Enough, let’s go.”

The three men loosened the two bodyguards and walked to that man’s side.

The man finally cast the three girls a final glance before walking away with the three men. The scene was so fast that it looked like they were just passersby.

Watching the two bodyguards lying on the ground screaming and groaning, Mingyu Jizi and the other two girls’ minds went blank. They completely did not know what just happened.

Standing next to Kazumi ten meters away from them, Take Asasei shakily said: “Kazumi, what just happened?” Fortunately, just now she was facing the opposite, so she did not see the scene where the two bodyguards were put down on the ground. Otherwise, she would definitely have nightmares because of that.

Similar to her, Kazumi also found no one chasing behind them. However, she was quicker than Take Asasei. When she turned around, she saw the few men put the two bodyguards down to the ground hard. But, because of her last experience with Sasako, she soon knew that her brother sent some men to secretly protect her. After thinking through this, in her heart surged a warm feeling that was hard to explain.

“I don’t know, let’s get out of here.” Afraid that her friend would continue to ask her, Kazumi immediately pulled her away.

“Ji, Jizi, who were those guys?” After a while, a girl finally could not bear but ask.

“How should I know? A group of waste.” After scolding a sentence in a low voice, Mingyu Jizi quickly walked back to the car. She just wanted to immediately leave this terrible place.

“Jizi, wait for me.” The two girls quickly followed her.

After she opened all the windows, Kazumi began to carefully clean the living room.

Although recently she almost always came here every day and could hardly find any dust in the apartment, she still very seriously cleaned it. She hoped that when her brother came back, the house would remain clean.

Looking at the shiny glass windows that she just polished, Kazumi somewhat proudly smiled.

Opening the refrigerator, she found some beverages and beer. After checking the dates on each of them, there was a bottle of expired juice. There were not that many beer left either; Tomorrow, she will have to go to the supermarket to buy some of them. After thinking about it, Kazumi took the expired bottle of juice and drained it.

Having nothing else to clean, Kazumi opened Lei Yin's room and walked in.

In the room, she has tidied up all of the books in the first few weeks. The bed sheet and the sheet were neatly folded and tucked. The clothes that needed to be washed were already washed and put in the closet.

Feeling that nothing can be done anymore, Kazumi a bit disappointedly sat beside the bed.

Seemingly unconscious, she opened the already folded sheet and refolded it again and again.

When the sheet was completely folded, which could win her a prize in sheet folding competition, she took the sheet in his arms and put her face on top of it.

“Brother, I beg you, come back quick. Mom and Rumi miss you so much. Me too. I beg you, please don't let anything happen.” The girl clung to the sheet and gently whispered.

Chapter 213 - Stopover

“How many people are there outside?” Hearing the outside explosions, Lei Yin loaded the submachine gun in his hands and asked.

Chang'an replied: “There are about two hundred people. Moreover, their offensive approach is very similar to a special force. I suspect they were sent here specifically to deal with us.”

“They went so far as to catch us in the residential area, it seems they really want to avenge about that last thing. Where is little Rei?”

“He's out there directing the fight along with the new dark group members.”

Lei Yin frowned, “After all these years, that kid still hasn't changed; As long as there is a fight, he will forget his own identity. Their main goal is still to catch him. Take me to him, now.”

“Yes, your excellency.” Chang'an immediately led Lei Yin outside.

When they went outside, they saw the firefight flame flashing everywhere, the explosion went again and again, just like in a battlefield. But strangely, the fire truck and the police have yet to arrive.

Chang'an also felt something amiss, “Your excellency, could they....”

Lei Yin lowered his voice and said: “It is possible. Perhaps they and the Swedish government have some kind of a secret agreement. Fortunately, they did not dare to brazenly dispatch helicopters. Otherwise, the outcome is hard to say. No need to think about this, let us see the situation first.”

When Lei Yin came to Rei Li's location, he saw Rei Li's militant face excitedly directed the hundreds of new dark group members

to use their large caliber weapon against the invading army who waged violent attack toward them.

In order to prevent the enemy from forcing them into a passive state, after a careful thinking, Rei Li finally decided to stay in the Swedish third largest city; Malmö, located in the southernmost part of Sweden, at the mouth of Baltic Sea strait. The city was right across from the Danish capital, Copenhagen. The distance between them was just 26 km. In addition to ferries, they were also linked by train. Such a strategic location can facilitate their escape to Denmark at any time.

The place that they chose to stay was in the medium-sized residential area outskirts of Malmö. There were lots of woods near that residential area, which can be used by them as a place to retreat when they found themselves in a very disadvantageous situation.

But at this time, having the advantage of large firepower and superior number, Rei Li never thought to retreat, seeking only to command the new dark group members to send those invading enemy back home.

When he was enjoying the fun, Rei Li suddenly felt a sharp pain coming from his head. He thought that someone had sneak-attacked him from behind and could not help but flow into a rage. He immediately took the submachine gun, ready to shoot the guy behind him into a hornet's nest.

However, when he saw the man behind him was clearly Lei Yin in his middle-aged man's face, he no longer dared to be presumptuous.

"Master, you're here." Seeing the hidden anger in Lei Yin's eyes, he could not help but afraid.

"It's cool here isn't it?" Lei Yin said with a faint smile.

Having been together with him for many years, Rei Li knew that

this was his master's expression when he was about to flatten people; He immediately backed a few steps away: "Master, I was wrong."

Lei Yin cursed, "You bonehead, don't you know that the one they're after is you! Yet, you still want to wander here, do you want to die? Go back with me, now."

"I just couldn't help it, I wouldn't dare the next time." Rei Li called out the two nearby deputies to take his place.

"I'll deal with you when we get in the house. What's the current situation?" Knowing that now was not the time to teach him a lesson, Lei Yin changed the topic as they walked back to the house.

Hearing his master asking this question, Rei Li's spirit immediately rose: "Those sons of b*tches are being pressed back by us. A little bit more and we'll blow the cr*p out of them. His grandma, this is so invigorating. In addition to the last time, this is the best."

Lei Yin thought otherwise, "We have superior firepower and number, even an idiot in command can win this fight. If you lose this time, you will no longer need to be a gangster anymore."

Rei Li unhappily complained, "Master, your so mean."

Lei Yin gave him a look and was about to speak, but suddenly he shot at his direction.

For this sudden move from Lei Yin, everyone was shocked. Bearing the brunt, Rei Li showed a disbelieve look, he cannot think that his master would do this to him.

Because they were very close to each other, the bullet soon arrived in front of Rei Li, but it did not hit him. Instead, the bullet flew past his ear.

Shortly thereafter, a pitiful scream came from behind Rei Li. At this time, Chang'an and the several dark group members went over to check it. They saw a blood flow appeared out of nowhere

behind Rei Li, the blood flow got increasingly thick.

This strange sight surprised everyone.

After shooting with his pistol, Lei Yin did not stop. He rapidly discarded the pistol and took the submachine gun from his back. He then strafed at the darkness and loudly said: “Enemies are near.”

Chang'an' reaction was the quickest; He immediately fired several shots at the area behind Rei Li. Several other team members followed suit.

As soon as he dodged, Rei Li turned around and looked. Only to see the motionless body of a gunned down naked man, lying on the ground

“Chang'an, what happened?” Rei Li asked, somewhat confused.

“That man is an Esper; Just as he wanted to get close to you, his excellency found out about it.” Chang'an went to his side and then concentrated on watching the surrounding environment.

At this time, Lei Yin stopped firing and then slowly went to Rei Li's side and said: “They're able to bypass our people and arrive here, looks like they are indeed Espers, be careful.”

“Never thought you would find us, this really surprise me.” From the darkness, came a young man's words that he said in English.

Lei Yin sneered, “The rat is finally tempted to come out and steal the food?”

“You're really rude.” A blond man in a black trench coat slowly walked out. He was followed by five men dressed in similar clothes, two of which are twin brothers.

Although most of the dark group members went to the periphery to engage the invading army, there were ten heavily armed dark group members by Rei Li's side. They were specially arranged by Chang'an to always protect Rei Li's trusted friends. Seeing them

strutted like that, Rei Li gave a wink and, as if by prior agreement, immediately opened fire at them.

Almost at the same time as they shot, the twin brothers suddenly walked one step forward and raised their hands before their bodies.

Then, except for Lei Yin, all of them saw an incredible scene. They saw all their bullets stopped in mid-air as if instantaneously frozen.

Rei Li, along with the other dark team members saw this scene for the first time in their lives. They suddenly forgot to continue to open fire and can only look ahead.

“Klang!” Like the sound of pieces of glasses fell to the ground, all the bullets fell down along with the twin’s hands.

“Give it up, you have been surrounded. In front of us, espers, ordinary people have no chance of winning.” The blonde man shrugged his shoulders and said.

Lei Yin walked two steps forward and sneered: “Espers? You guys are nothing more than experimental rats that were lucky enough to survive the experiments. I really want to know if, after the experiments, your little “brother” is as small as those big-eyed aliens, or simply not there.”

Hearing Lei Yin’s words, the blond man’s face changed. His eyes also changed, losing their previous elegant look. His face started to turn red because of anger and his expression was filled with hatred. His several other men’s faces also turned ugly.

Seeing his expression, Lei Yin said with a smile: “It seems like my guess is right. What a pity, so young yet turned androgynous.” The tone of his voice was filled with sympathy.

“I will make you regret what you just said.” The blonde man exposed a cruel smile on his lips.

“It seems like, in life, a man cannot be too honest.”

Before Lei Yin finished, three bullets almost simultaneously appeared in front of the twins and the blonde man's foreheads.

Because it was too sudden, the three espers did not have the time to react and can only watch as the golden bullets continued to get closer to them. But when the three bullets were about to hit them, they suddenly stopped less than a half meter away in front them.

But at the same time, Lei Yin swung the black sword, which inexplicably appeared in his hand, horizontally toward that blonde man's throat.

No one can see him swing the blade, it was as if there was nothing in Lei Yin's hand; That sword was just like an invisible specter that can easily pass through the force wall that stopped those bullets, and then crossed through the blonde man's neck as if there was no barrier.

The bullet that was stopped in front of his forehead fell down, but his eyes showed an incredulous look. Then a trace of blood seeped through a thin line on his neck. Finally, his body fell to the ground and his head separated from his neck, rolling to the side.

After the first success, Lei Yin did not stop; He jumped to the side while shouting: "Shoot! Now!"

Rei Li was the first to react; He quickly opened fire to those espers. Chang'an and the other dark group members followed suit.

Seeing the twins, who although appeared confused, still able to stop the bullets in time, Lei Yin could not help but secretly thought what a pity. In order not to let those espers displayed their offensive ability, he said aloud: "Retreat to the house, now."

The other people immediately created a covering fire as they went back inside the house. After entering the house, Lei Yin immediately shot the electric power switch. Instantly, the whole house went dark. Lei Yin and the rest of his people ran to the basement.

At this time, some of the Black Dragon members heard the gunfire from the inside, they immediately came running here. But before they can approach, hundreds of heavily armed men rushed out of the woods and opened fire at them. Two members were shot on the spot; The other had to find a place to cover and shoot back.

At this time, Lei Yin and his group have walked out of the secret passage. They were now 200 meters away from the woods behind the house in the Eastern direction. From their secret passage, they quietly circled around from the woods, intending to do a flank attack behind those invading army.

“His grandma, I never expect they would send so many people here. If I knew, I would have transferred some more people here.” When they heard the report about the number of the enemies from one of their outside team members through the radio, Rei Li could not help but whisper a curse.

Chang'an whispered to Lei Yin: “I can't believe they even deployed their special forces, looks like they really intent on taking Rei Li this time.”

Lei Yin said in a deep voice: “We should not be afraid of their people out here because their number are still less than our people. On the shootout, we should have a higher chance of winning. Now I am just worried about those few espers. Looking at their strong ability, they are obviously the kind of people that have been transformed. Unfortunately, our other members cannot come to back us up and we have to rely on our own. If we cannot kill those espers, then the other members will be in a very dangerous situation.”

Thinking about those few people who can stop bullets in mid-air, Rei Li cannot help but feel a headache.

Chapter 214 - Contradiction

Sitting in the taxi, Take Asasei has mixed feelings.

She did not understand why she wanted to do this, knowing that there was no point in doing so. But, she still came.

“Miss, we’ve arrived at the movie theater.”

Take Asasei was awakened by the voice of the taxi driver. Looking out of the window, she discovered that she really has arrived.

After she got off and paid the fare, she looked at the front of the movie theater in a daze. Although she never watched a movie in this movie theater, this place was filled with too many bad memories.

Tokyo’s nightlife was very rich. Even now, when it was already past midnight, the lights from various shops continued to shine bright, making people feel that it was not late yet.

She slowly walked toward the restaurant next to the movie theater, wondering if the man was really there or not.

It was a great restaurant, with European-style fine decoration, which looked very fancy. Although it was late at night, the restaurant was still open for business, even though from the outside looking at the inside, there were not that many guests.

“Welcome. May I ask for how many people?” When Take Asasei walked in, a waitress came to greet her.

“Just one.” Take Asasei replied while sweeping her eyes toward the entire dining room from the corner where she stood.

“Please sit down.” The waitress took her to a nearby table.

“I want to sit inside.”

“Okay, please come with me.”

Walking closer and closer, Take Asasei's heart beat faster. Finally, in one secluded corner, she saw a man in a suit sitting there.

He is still waiting for her. Take Asasei's heart was filled with a trace of sour.

"I'll just sit here." Take Asasei pointed to a nearby table and said to the waitress.

After only ordering a cup of coffee, Take Asasei silently looked at the man sitting in a gloomy light waiting for someone.

After an indeterminate time, Take Asasei lifted the cup of coffee and took a sip, but found that the initially warm coffee has turned cold. This cold coffee tasted bitter than usual and difficult to swallow.

She then remembered that previously, she never drank coffee, but did not know when it began, she started to get used to this slightly bitter beverage; Perhaps she began to be influenced since she started living with her friend.

Thinking of this friend, Take Asasei could not help but smile. Kazumi was always so mature and calm. Perhaps only coffee, this kind of bitter drink, that was a better suit for her. Except in front of her strange brother, she always has a cool expression. She was not pretending to be aloof from bored arrogance, but rather she did not give a d*mn about other people's opinion. Take Asasei has never met such a girl in her entire life.

Although Kazumi was cold and calm, she has her own unique temperament that can make all the people that came in contact with her unconsciously attracted to her. Perhaps, he was one of them.

Ever since she knew the truth, she always hated that man. Originally, she thought she could quickly forget him, but seeing him almost every day coming to the bookstore looking for Kazumi,

her heart was unable to calm down. So much so that on hearing he wanted to wait for Kazumi here, she even foolishly came here to see if he was really here for Kazumi.

Ogata Yasuda did not know that there was a young woman staring at him quietly in the distance.

From eight o'clock in the morning to one o'clock past midnight, he already felt his whole body went numb. Unable to remember how many cups of coffee that he drank, only now he discovered that drinking too much coffee will become bitter.

That woman did not come. Actually, at that time, from her cold eyes, he knew that this would be the result. After forcing himself to continue to wait for her, he began to suspect that he has a masochistic tendency.

At this time, except for the young man and woman, there was no other guest. Besides the constantly reverberating music in the dining room, it was quiet.

After an indeterminate time later, the waitress went to Take Asasei and said: "I am sorry, miss, we would like to close, would you please come again tomorrow?"

Take Asasei looked at the watch; It was two o'clock in the morning. She immediately stood up and said: "I am sorry, I will go now." Finally, after glancing at Ogata Yasuda at the corner, she walked toward the counter.

When she was checking out at the counter, she heard the man's voice, "Call your manager, I want to reserve this entire dining room."

The waitress very awkwardly said to him: "Sir, we really have to close, would you please come back tomorrow?"

Ogata Yasuda somewhat testily said: "I said I want the entire restaurant for myself, call your manager, now!"

That waitress had no choice but to go running to look for the

restaurant manager.

Hearing this, Take Asasei secretly sighed and then walked out of the restaurant.

—

“His grandma, how on earth did they know we’re here?” Rei Li swore in a low voice while loading the submachine gun.

When they were ready to attack those attackers from behind, unexpectedly, they were ambushed. Dozens of men in black surrounded them. Moreover, those espers were also waiting for them there. Fortunately, they quickly threw a flash grenade and, taking advantage of the resulting confusion, went to the East of the woods.

But they can only run for a short time because the east side of the woods was very small. Soon, they were quickly surrounded by that dozens of men in black once again.

At this time they heard the twins said to the men in black: “Kill everyone except for Rei Li and the man who killed Robert. We want to slowly kill that guy.”

“Your excellency, I’ll distract them, you guys can break through to the left.” Chang’an said to Lei Yin in a low voice.

Lei Yin shook his head and said: “It’s useless, their firepower is too fierce, moreover, there are several espers on their side, several people can do nothing to them.”

“Then what should we do, master?”

“How many grenades do we have left?” Lei Yin asked.

After counting the individual grenade, Rei Li replied: “There are twenty of them.”

Lei Yin thought for a moment, “That’s almost enough. As soon as we throw the grenades, as long as we can rush to the nearby perimeter, where our people are many, we should be safe there.

When it start, I'll lead the way, little Rei and Chang'an will be responsible for the two sides. The other team members will be responsible for the rear. Is that clear?"

"Yes."

Just as they were about to execute their plan, Rei Li suddenly rose up into the air without a warning.

"It's those espers, shoot, now!" Lei Yin held Rei Li by the foot with one hand to stop him from rising even higher. At the same time, he opened fire using his right hand toward the front. Chang'an and the other team members also continued to shoot at the front.

Because the force that let Rei Li's body rose was too strong, Lei Yin was unable to pull him down and had to constantly strengthen his internal force to pull Rei Li down. Being pulled by two powerful forces on opposite sides, Rei Li felt that his left leg would soon break off. But he endured the severe pain without uttering a single word for fear that it would affect his master.

At this time, Chang'an saw a man in black on the left fired four bullets right at Lei Yin's chest.

Without thinking, Chang'an threw himself in front of Lei Yin.

"Pop, pop!" Several bullets hit Chang'an on the chest.

"Your excellency, I am okay...." Before he finished talking, he suddenly threw a mouthful of blood.

Although his bulletproof vest saved him from a fatal blow, because it was too close, the impact of the bullets hurt his internal organs.

After backhanding the man in black with the rifle butt, Lei Yin immediately machine-gunned his surrounding.

"Since you unexpectedly killed Robert, we will absolutely not let you off. I want you to watch them die in front of you one by one."

At this time, from the forest in front of them came the twin's resentful voice.

Seeing Chang'an panting hard after vomiting blood and Rei Li stuck in mid-air, Lei Yin's eyes changed.

"Your excellency...." The first one to see the change in Lei Yin's eyes was Chang'an, who immediately alarmed.

"Since other people want to play, I'll play with them till the end." Lei Yin said and then threw away the submachine gun in his hand.

"Your excellency, no...." Chang'an, who seemed to know what he wanted to do, immediately tried to stop him.

"Help me pull little Rei." While speaking, Lei Yin's body was suddenly suffused with a previously seen vague strange gloss

"Your excellency!" Chang'an called out with red eyes and then held the-floating-in-mid-air Rei Li with both of his hands.

After letting loose of Rei Li's left leg, Lei Yin pulled out a sword from his waist.

Then, he suddenly disappeared in front of Chang'an, as if by chance blew by the breeze.

—

Hearing the sound of water spray from inside the bathroom stopped, Take Asasei knew that Kazumi would come out soon. She immediately felt a bit uneasy and restless.

Sure enough, before long, dressed in a bathrobe and a slightly damp hair, Kazumi walked out from the bathroom.

Sitting on the couch, Kazumi rubbed her damp hair with a towel.

"Kazumi...." Take Asasei gently called out.

"What's the matter?" Kazumi turned to look at her.

"I, I have something to tell you."

Seeing her hesitant look, Kazumi put down the towel, "Is there

something wrong, little Take?”

Take Asasei lowered her head and said: “It’s like this. That, that guy is still in the dining room waiting for you.”

“That guy? You mean Ogata Yasuda?”

“Yes, last night, he waited for you for the whole night. Now, he is still waiting for you at that restaurant.”

Kazumi frowned, “How did you know he waited for me for the whole night? Did you go see him?”

“Yes, I went there last night and this afternoon.”

“Little Take, you don’t need to pay attention to that person. He’s just acting.”

“No, he’s not. I can see that he’s really sincere this time. Go look at him, okay?” Take Asasei pleaded.

“I am not going to see him. That guy has nothing to do with me.” Kazumi stood up and walked to her room.

Take Asasei immediately took her hand and very emotionally said: “I beg you, Kazumi. Please go to the appointment, okay? If you don’t, he’ll probably continue to wait there.”

Seeing the girl’s tear-filled eyes, Kazumi could not help but gawk a bit. Until now, she did not really appreciate how deep Take Asasei’s feeling for Ogata Yasuda really is.

“Kazumi, I beg you....Please go to the appointment, okay?” This time, Take Asasei has been choked with tears, yet she still firmly held Kazumi’s hand.

With a sigh, Kazumi lifted Take Asasei’s face and used the towel to wipe the tears from her face, and then said: “Don’t cry, I’ll go.”

Hearing this, Take Asasei excitedly asked: “Is this true?”

Kazumi nodded her head and then said: “Just this once and never again.”

“Thank you, Kazumi.” Take Asasei very happily hugged her.

Looking at his slightly pale face on the mirror, Ogata Yasuda wryly smiled, the man in the mirror instantly followed with a rueful smile.

Crazy, I must be crazy. I have never waited for anyone for more than ten minutes. But, I actually sit here for a day and a night, just to wait for that woman who is impossible to appear. Perhaps to keep myself going, I numb my body with my masochistic tendency.

Coming out from the restroom, Yasuda returned to his seat. The coffee on the table has been replaced with water. Because he felt that if he continues to drink, he may really be poisoned because of high caffeine.

Looking at his watch, he found that it was already ten o'clock in the evening. However, to him, there was no difference between ten o'clock in the evening and ten o'clock in the morning. Right now, he was not only waiting for that woman, he also wanted to know when the idea of “give up” will appear in his mind.

At this time, a person came up. Thinking that it was the waitress who wanted to refill his glass of water, Yasuda closed his eyes, too lazy to take a look.

After a while, he felt strange that he has yet to hear the sound of someone pouring the water. When he opened his eyes, he saw the cold look of a woman standing next to the table looking at him.

“Kazumi!” Ogata Yasuda stood up, showing his “I can’t believe this” look.

After slowly pulling the chair opposite of him, Kazumi sat down.

Ogata Yasuda watched from the side as she sat down.

Looking at his slightly messy suit and a bit tilted hair, Kazumi started to believe that he was really here for a day and a night.

“May I ask your order?” A waitress came up and asked. While

asking, she quietly sized Kazumi up, to see what this girl, who can make this guy wait for a day and a night, really look like.

“No need, thank you,” Kazumi replied.

The waitress looked at the handsome man, only to find that he was staring at the girl as if he did not hear her at all, so she had to bitterly walk away.

“Kazumi, you’re finally here.” Ogata Yasuda dryly coughed and said.

“Why are you looking for me?” Kazumi coldly said.

“Has anyone ever told you that you really look beautiful in a dress?” After a moment of silence, Ogata Yasuda suddenly said something senseless.

Kazumi frowned, “You asked me out just to say this silly thing?”

“Kazumi, I like you, would you like to be my girlfriend?” Ogata Yasuda suddenly grabbed her right hand and said.

Kazumi angrily pulled her hand, stood up and ready to leave.

Ogata Yasuda hastened to stand in front of her and said: “Kazumi, I really mean it, please give me a chance okay?”

“I told you, I don’t want to waste my time to play this silly game with you, get out of my way.” Kazumi coldly looked at him.

Yasuda held her shoulders and excitedly said: “This is not a game, I really like you.”

“If you don’t let go of me, I won’t be polite anymore.”

Seeing the anger in Kazumi’s eyes, Yasuda immediately loosened his hands and said: “Kazumi, please let me explain it clearly to you, okay?”

Looking at his serious face, Kazumi thought for a moment and finally slowly returned to her seat.

Overjoyed, Yasuda quickly sat back to his seat, collected his

thoughts and then said: “I can personally guarantee that this is not a game. I admit, at first, I pursued you just so that I can get back at you. But slowly, I discovered that I really like you. Kazumi, please give me a chance? I mean it.”

Kazumi said nothing, just quietly watching him. In this silent atmosphere, Ogata Yasuda felt an unprecedented tension.

After a while, Kazumi finally spoke, “I refuse.”

Ogata Yasuda’s facial expression changed; He said: “I am not asking you to be my girlfriend now, but only to try to accept me, is this too much to ask?”

Kazumi calmly said: “Honestly, until now I still can’t believe that you would like an ordinary woman like me. But even if it’s true, my answer will still be the same. Therefore, please don’t come looking for me in the future.”

“Why?” Yasuda could not help but become emotional.

“Not every question has an answer. Tell you one thing, the reason I came to this appointment is because little Take had cried and begged me to do it. She had twice secretly come to see you. Even if you had done that excessive thing to her, she still has such a concern for you; Do you know what kind of girl that you hurt?” With that, Kazumi stood up and walked out.

This time, Yasuda did not stop her, just staring at her back as she left.

After a while, he suddenly shouted at her back: “I will not give up.”

Kazumi walked out of the restaurant as if she did not hear anything.

After she walked out of the restaurant, Ogata Yasuda feebly sat down.

Chapter 215 - Sword

Besides Chang'an, the dark group members standing next to Chang'an and those Espers looking at them from the among the trees also watched this scene.

“What’s happening? Where did that man go?” One of the twins asked in surprised.

Suddenly, he heard a strange noise coming from behind, then, it was as if something fell to the ground.

At the same time, the twins clearly saw Rei Li, who has been floating in mid-air, all of a sudden fell down.

“Peter, what’s the matter?” Peter was the one responsible for handling Rei Li, so, seeing this, the twins immediately turned and asked.

But Peter was unable to answer them because his head has been separated from his neck.

What stood behind them was only a headless corpse whose blood gushed out of his severed neck. Perhaps because of the stiff joints, he did not fall down just yet.

Seeing this bizarre scene, the twins and two other Espers who stood near Peter freaked out, they did not know what just happened. They can only gawk at the slowly contracting muscle tissue on Peter’s severed neck.

“Pe, Peter!” One of the Espers called out.

Just then, one of the twins seemed to see something from the corner of his eyes. He quickly turned his head and saw next to one of the Espers suddenly appeared a man dressed in black clothes.

“David, be careful, there’s someone....”

But before he finished, he saw the man suddenly disappeared, but David showed an incredibly horrified look.

“Save me....” Tears welled up in David’s eyes. As the tears gushed out, bright red liquid continued to seep out from a very fine line on his neck

“Pa!” David slowly knelt down and then his entire upper body fell to the ground. When his body fell, his head separated from his body and rolled to the side. The ever-gushing blood that came out from the severed neck dyed a portion of the ground with dark red color.

“David!” One of the twins who gave a warning called out.

Another twins subconsciously looked at the third Espers.

As he expected, that ghost-like black figure appeared beside that third Espers.

Having no time to think, he immediately raised his hand and unleashed his mind force on that shadow.

But the moment he raised his hand, that figure disappeared. Shortly thereafter, with a “Pop” sound, his huge strength knocked back that Esper to a tree trunk before coming to a halt.

That Esper fell down like a doll whose joint was broken. Then, his head fell down and stopped moving only after rolling several times on the ground.

“You monster, if you have the guts, come out and fight us face to face.” That twins called out, but with a slightly trembling voice, which revealed the fear in his heart.

Another twin also began to feel afraid. He cannot imagine such a creature actually exist in this world. Although all of these seemed very long, the opposite party actually took less than twenty seconds to dispatch three modified Espers. That unable-to-be-explained-by-common-sense terrifying speed has gone far beyond the power of Espers.

After their transformation, they turned from ordinary people into Espers with much greater power. Through continuous

training and tests, he and his brother thought that, except for the people who were similarly transformed like them, no one can pose a threat to them. Those who previously bullied them now looked just like ants in front of them.

However, after seeing one Esper after another killed by that mysterious shadow in front of them, unprecedented fear filled their hearts. They have never felt the threat of death so vividly like now.

Just then, not far away from their left, several pitiful yelling sounds suddenly sounded, followed by a disorderly sound of gunfire.

Like the falling dominoes, the scream and the sound of gunfire continued to sound from their left to their right.

Under the shine of searchlights, the twins saw the surrounding special forces around them suddenly fell down, one by one.

Like a virus that can quickly spread through the air, more and more of their people inexplicably fell.

“Monster, there’s a monster!” Seeing this, the other men in black went crazy, some of them simply took their assault rifles and carelessly strafed their surroundings, hoping to drive away the invisible demon.

But even so, the rate of which the men in black inexplicably died did not lessen. Three minutes later, except for a few men in black who were shooting like crazy, the other men in black who surrounded Rei Li’s group can no longer get up.

The intense fear has destroyed the twin brothers’ autonomic nervous system. They can no longer keep their false calm, the two immediately ran outside.

But they just ran a few steps, a faint shadow suddenly appeared five to six meters in front of them.

By this time, the twins finally saw that person’s face. He was the

middle-aged man who previously killed Robert.

Just earlier, they wanted to seize this man and slowly torture him to death. But now, when they saw him again, a surge of chill unconsciously surged in their hearts.

“Who, who exactly are you!” The elder twin closely looked at him.

“Didn’t you just say you want revenge? Now I am giving you a chance to try.” Lei Yin dismissively said.

The twin brothers looked at each other for a moment, and suddenly shouted, “Then go to hell.” At the same time, they both raised their hands.

Everything did not seem to change in the slightest, at least in the eyes of outsiders.

But if you look closely, you’ll find everything in front of the twin brothers seemed to stand still.

The grass on the ground did not swing along with the night breeze like before. The nearby branches and leaves seemed to be sealed by huge blocks of ice.

Seeing the middle-aged man did not move, the twin brothers slowly revealed a proud smile.

But soon, their smiles disappeared, because they saw the man who was supposed to be sealed by their telekinetic power suddenly took a step forward, then another, and another. Then, he slowly walked toward them.

The twin brothers showed the “unable to believe” look on their faces. To them this was impossible, they have simultaneously used their telekinetic ability to create a combined force field. Inside this force field was basically a sealed environment, nothing can move inside it, including the previous bullets that were coming at them.

Seeing that the man was getting closer and closer, the two

people's eyes once again showed the frightened look. While launching their telekinetic ability, they must maintain a high degree of concentration, in other words, they had no way back now. As soon as they recovered their telekinetic ability and tried to escape, it was highly likely that this man, with his amazing speed, would easily overtake and kill them.

Thus, they had no choice but to increase their telekinetic power.

At this time, the blue veins on the two brothers forehead were already exposed, and blood constantly dripped from their bleeding nose. Their appearances were very similar with the look on Jiro Yamahara before he died.

After arriving at the spot less than two meters in front of the two brothers, Lei Yin finally stopped. Seeing this, the two brothers' eyes revealed a slightly relieved look.

At this time, Lei Yin suddenly looked at them and sneered, "Are Espers so great?" As soon as he finished saying, with an incredible speed, his right hand moved across their necks.

Suddenly, the grass on the ground and the three branches resumed their "swaying by the wind," that huge block of ice seemed to be instantly disappeared. The twin brothers, with great terror, looked at the man in front of them, and then slowly fell to the ground. As soon as their bodies touched the ground, their young heads separated from their neck.

The few men in black that saw this scene felt chilled to the bones. Just now, they have already lost their confidence when they saw many of their companions inexplicably died by his sword. But now, the five Espers who they secretly referred to as monsters were also killed by this man, the next target should be them. Thinking of this, these special forces, who never thought of escape, could no longer withstand the fear. They immediately turned around and ran away.

Lei Yin did not go after them, just watching them leave with an

indifferent expression.

After a while, his face suddenly showed a strange expression. Then, he put his hand on his chest and, with a “poof” sound, his mouth spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Master!” Rei Li screamed and rushed over to support him.

The severely wounded Chang’an also ran over to his side, “Your excellency....”

Looking at the two people’s red eyes, Lei Yin wryly smiled, wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth, and bitterly said: “Looks like I really have to say goodbye this time, don’t die you two.”

“Master, you....”

Patting their shoulders, Lei Yin pushed their hands away from him, and then, after smiling at them for a moment, finally, he suddenly disappeared in front of them.

“Master!” Rei Li knelt on the ground, crying out loud. His voice rang through the forest.

Looking at the direction where Lei Yin disappeared, Chang’an slowly walked to the nearby two men in black’s corpses and took their two submachine guns.

“Little Rei, now is not the time to cry, we have to take revenge for his excellency.”

Looking at Chang’an’s calm countenance, Rei Li stopped crying and stood up. Then, with the same calm expression as Chang’an, he slowly took the submachine gun that was handed to him.

—

“Three hundred members of special forces almost being wiped out, and how do you want me to report this?” In the spacious office, a fifty-something-year-old man slapped the report on the table with his palm.

“I, I am sorry, their combat effectiveness is far beyond our expectation, but their casualties are not small either.”

The man sneered, “Oh, so you’re an excellent commander for dealing that much casualties on the enemy, right? This is not a good excuse, don’t forget, the opposite party is a gangster organization and you are the elite of the military, do you think this is a reasonable result?”

“I am sorry, Sir.”

Glancing at him, the man sighed and said: “Tom, you have really disappointed me this time.”

“I am sorry, uncle.” The petty officer said, ashamed.

A bit powerless to sit down, the man suddenly said: “You mentioned in the report that your team saw those five monsters were killed by a man using a sword, is that true?”

“Yes, according to these team members, the man can suddenly appear and disappear like a ghost. All the people that were near him when he appeared were killed by him, including those Espers. But we have received the latest report that said the man seemed seriously injured because someone saw him spit blood. Later on, he suddenly left them; Now his fate is unknown. But according to Rei Li’s reaction at that time, he may well have died; According to the then team members report, at that time, Rei Li called him master.”

“Rei Li’s master? Is he Yan Yuxiao who was rumored to have died ten years ago? Is he really not dead?” The man pondered.

“Although according to hearsay Yan Yuxiao is already dead, nobody has ever seen his corpse. Moreover, even though that person’s face is a bit different than Yan Yuxiao’s face ten years ago, maybe he has a facelift. But there is one thing I don’t understand, even if he is Yan Yuxiao, he is still an ordinary person, it should be impossible for him to do that thing.”

The man said in low voice: “There is one thing you may not

know, two years ago, at the research site off the coast of New York, those people at the G area had an encounter with the Black Dragon. At the time, a mysterious man in a hooded face appeared and killed more than three hundred well-trained veterans and mercenaries in less than five minutes. Moreover, his killing technique is very similar to the one in your report. In light of your report, we should be able to conclude that that mysterious person may really be Yan Yuxiao. He is likely an Esper with unknown abilities. According to rumors, Yan Yuxiao never lost to anyone in his entire life. If he really is an Esper with special abilities, then all this can be reasonably explained.”

“Uncle, what should we do next? Should we continue to send people to catch Rei Li by force?” That petty officer asked.

“No, we don’t need to act rashly this time. According to this piece of report, it seems like Rei Li wants to take revenge on us. If this is true, then he would have to look for something powerful that can compete with us. And that something is exactly what we want to obtain.”

Seeing the mysterious smile that appeared on the corner of his uncle’s mouth, the petty officer could not help but somewhat confuse. He did not understand what “something powerful” that his uncle said really means.

Chapter 216 - Heart Of A Man

Late at night, a medium-sized manned aircraft quietly flew over the Sea of Japan and head straight to the open sea.

At about three o'clock in the morning, the plane landed on the beach on a deserted island.

After the plane stopped, more than ten men in black leotards stepped down from the plane.

At this time, a thirty-year-old man who seemed to be the leader came down from the plane and immediately commanded his people to pull the plane into the woods to hide it.

Then the man said to his men with a sinking voice: "These few days might be a little hard on you. Now go to rest, we will continue again tomorrow. But remember, don't make fire or lit up a light."

"Yes." Those men in black outfit answered in unison.

That man wanted to immediately go to that place, but he knew that night at subtropical jungle was very dangerous. Moreover, they have been on a plane for hours and already tired by now, so it was better to take a break.

The next morning, after eating something, Rei Li immediately went deep into the jungle with his men.

After walking for about two hours, they finally arrived at their destination.

Last time he came here was three months or so ago, the spot where they dug out the dirt was already overgrown with small trees and various kinds of weed.

Following the memory of the marks that they previously left, Rei Li finally managed to find that specific spot.

Unlike before, they did not need to bury the whole site again, and just need to dig deep enough to where the gap was.

Thus, starting from when they arrived that morning, Rei Li and his more than ten men began to dig the soil with digging tools as if they were miners.

In addition to the five surviving dark group members who previously came here, the rest were new dark group members who did not know what was buried underneath. Days and nights, under Rei Li's command, they kept on doing the thing that was unfamiliar to them

—

“Mr. Chen, everybody is ready and can start at any time.” A man in front of a middle-aged man said.

“Have the injured brothers got there?” Chang'an looked up and asked.

“Yes, they have arrived.”

“I know, I'll go out.”

That member gave him a salute before he walked out of the room.

“Little Rei, don't let something happen to you.” Chang'an' pale face showed his anxious look.

Ever since they exchanged fires with those special forces, although they eventually won, their dark group members suffered heavy casualties. In the end, he decided to temporarily evacuate the remaining members away from Sweden.

With a sigh, Chang'an slowly stood up and walked out of the room.

—

A week later, on the island, the more than ten people have dug a pit nearly thirty meters deep, eight meters long and ten meters wide. Approximately the size of a half basketball court.

Previously, they did not need to dig so wide, but due to Rei Li's

memory error, the digging location was not that accurate, so much so that they only found the gap after digging for more than five days.

Because of fear of being detected, Rei Li chose to rest at day and dig at night. Working under the dark environment was also one of the reasons for their slowness.

Looking at the seemingly bottomless gap, Rei Li suddenly had a disquieting thought.

Can I really use these things inside to avenge master?

Taking a deep breath, he slowly walked toward the gap.

Just as he was about two to three meters away from the gap, all of a sudden, gunfire can be heard from above. One of the bullets hit the ground in front of him.

Hearing the gunfire, the face of all the people in the pit immediately changed.

Looking up, they saw several heavily armed men in camouflaged fatigue stood near the edge of the pit.

Several dark group members wanted to pull out their guns, but Rei Li immediately shouted, “Nobody move!”

He knew that they could not survive a shootout standing in this narrow environment.

Rei Li then looked up and loudly said: “We surrender.”

After a while, someone up there loudly said through a loudspeaker: “Everyone put your weapons on the ground now. If you have any unusual move, we’ll immediately shoot.”

Rei Li said to the more than ten dark group members: “Do as they say, throw your guns on the ground.”

Everyone began to quietly take out their guns and threw them on the ground.

That man up there continued: “Now everyone climbs one by one.”

With ashen face, Rei Li walked to the rope ladder in front of him and then slowly climbed.

Seeing this, the rest of the dark group members had no choice but to follow, one by one.

After climbing out of the pit, Lei Yin saw more than a hundred guns, as well as searchlights, were aimed at him. He roughly calculated that they have at least a hundred people. Seeing their appearance, all of them should be well-trained soldiers.

“Put your hands up.” A man shouted to him.

Rei Li shrugged and put his hands above his head.

Suddenly, he found out that he cannot move his body as if being sealed by wax. This experience of unable to move his body was not the first time for him. Previously in Sweden when they exchanged fire with them, he had experienced this once. He immediately knew these people have at least one Esper among them.

“Done, you may cuff his hands.” At this time, a female voice suddenly sounded.

Rei Li could not help but surprise for a moment, Is that Esper a woman? Although he would like to see her, because the searchlights that were too powerful, he cannot clearly see ahead.

This time, a man came and cuffed his hands with handcuffs.

Just as the man was about to cuff the other dark group members, a young male voice said: “Add one more.”

That man added a pair of handcuffs on his wrists. After this, Rei Li found that his body can move again.

After everyone has been handcuffed, a 40-something man walked up to Rei Li with a smiling face and said: “If it weren’t for you, we really have no way to find this place. Moreover, you even helped us

dug up the site, I really don't know how to thank you."

Rei Li said with a smile: "You're welcome. As long as you no longer fart in front of me, I will be satisfied."

The man's face changed, Rei Li immediately received his heavy punch on the belly.

Rei Li crouched down in pain, but he greeted his teeth, not making any sound.

Seeing Rei Li was beaten, several dark group members wanted to rush over but was stopped by Rei Li.

Rei Li stood up, looked at the man in front of him and sneered: "Aren't your country often claim to be the champion of human rights? Is punching a prisoner with no ability to fight back what you call human rights?"

"For people like you, there is simply no need to talk about human rights." The man sent another punch to his lower abdomen once again.

When he wanted to add another punch, the woman stopped him, "Mr. Rhodes, now is not the time to be emotional. The above wants to get the things inside the remain as soon as possible. Please don't waste any more time, okay?"

Hearing that woman, the middle-aged man revealed a flash of anger. But he stopped punching Rei Li. He turned around and said to the man behind him: "Treat them well, but if they there is a suspicious movement from them, immediately execute on the spot."

"Yes." The man immediately rushed over and bring the other 30 or so men to take Rei Li and his men to the back.

When passing through their side, Rei Li finally saw the look of that woman. The woman was about 25-26 years old, looking very beautiful. Especially her eyes which can poison people's mind to attract their attention. Although she, like others, wore the same

camouflage outfit, Rei Li could see that she has a very good figure.

When he was looking at the woman, she was also looking at him. He did not know if it was just an illusion, but Rei Li noticed the woman was looking at him with strange eyes.

The man called Rhodes used a rope ladder to climb down the pit with more than ten soldiers. The woman and the young man who previously talked looked at each other and followed suit.

After they began to climb down, Rei Li suddenly said to the man in front of him: “Hey, I want to take a pee.”

The man sneered, “I advise you not to play tricks, if you really can’t hold it anymore, you can pee right there.”

Rei Li stared at him but did not make any sound.

The man sneered again and turned his head back.

After a while, Rei Li suddenly said: “Hey, how about we talk about business?”

The man did not want to talk to him, but feeling a bit bored, he casually said: “What kind of business? Don’t tell me you want me to let you go?”

“Don’t worry, I will not make such an idiot request. I am just curious, how did you know I was here? If you are willing to answer this question, I will tell you my private Swiss bank account as well as the passwords.”

The man’s heart palpitated, this was indeed a very enticing condition. The Black Dragon is an international underworld organization which has business in the black and white world. As its leader, his personal asset must have been absolutely astronomical.

Although his heart was really tempted, seeing the 30 something people guarding nearby, he knew he has no way of completing this business. Although money is a good thing, life is more important.

Although Rei Li has already been caught, if someone leaks this secret, he will definitely not have a good end.

The man coldly snorted, “No comment.”

Rei Li smiled. From this man’s eyes, he knew he must have been tempted. He just can’t agree to it because there were people nearby. Rei Li went on to say: “I believe your subordinates are also interested in this money. Then how about this, why don’t you take half of them? The remaining half will be divided among your men. With this, they would not say something they should not say.”

Just as he expected, the eyes of the more than 30 people guarding nearby began to change, brimming with desire, but nobody dared to make a noise.

Their superior managed to swallow down a mouthful of saliva with great difficulties. After looking around at his own men, the man turned his gaze toward Rei Li.

After thinking for a long time, the flash of desire in his eyes gradually dimmed.

“What about it? Have you considered it? The money in my account is much more than you can imagine.”

“Shut up!” The man shouted.

His men could not help but look at him with surprise in their eyes.

Realizing his gaffe, the man immediately quieted down. After a while, he said to Rei Li: “If you dare to speak about that again, I will immediately seal your mouth.”

“What a pity.” Rei Li deliberately sighed.

Seeing Rei Li did not make any sound, the man turned his head back.

His heart still beat rapidly. Just now, he really came close to agree with him. But after a careful thought, he knew that this was

impossible.

Having three people know a secret is not a secret at all. And here, there were more than thirty people. Even if all of them get their money to shut their mouth off, it was still difficult to ensure, in the future, no one will intentionally or unintentionally say it. Therefore, he absolutely cannot take this risk. If it was only him, he certainly did not want to refuse such a ridiculous conditions. This man called Rei Li is the leader of the Black Dragon, just thinking about how many zeros are in his bank account was enough to make his scalp tingle.

Night on this deserted island was no different than the night in other places, and because, for most of the time, it was deserted, the natural atmosphere here was richer than those so-called resorts. If there were no unwanted visitors such as these heavily armed unpleasant men, perhaps this would be a delightful evening as usual.

Except for the fireflies that often occur in the summer, one can hear the sound from all sorts of insect or frog in the distance.

Before long, when the man turned his head again, the silent Rei Li suddenly revealed a surprised look.

Change always happens in a split second.

Explosion and terrifying shocks happened in an instant.

No one knew what happened. In a huge explosion sound which came without a warning, all those who have been standing on the ground jarred and fell to the ground.

Just like the beginning of the storm, that explosion was just the beginning, continuous explosions came from the ground beneath the surface. Although not as terrifying as the first one, the constant repetition of strong vibration made it feel like some kind of doomsday.

“What is happening?” That man loudly called out.

Suddenly, he heard a few screams from behind him. He turned his head and saw the nine handcuffed dark group members, as well as Rei Li, suddenly free from their handcuffs.

In the shortest period of time, they pounced on their nearest enemy. And the remaining few dark group members who were still handcuffed quickly ran to the nearby wood.

Because all of these happened all of a sudden, those soldiers were directly stabbed to death by those nine dark group members. After that, these nine people immediately snatched the submachine guns from the dead soldiers' hands and shot the other guards. While shooting, they retreated to the woods.

The fifty people who guarded the pit, hearing the shot, immediately rushed over to give reinforcement.

But when they arrived, all of the dark group members have fled into the woods.

“Sir, do you want to go after them?” The man responsible for the guard talked to the leading man.

Looking into the dark woods, the leading man shook his head: “No need, they have nothing of value anymore. Now the most important thing is figuring out what exactly happened just now.”

Just as his voice fell, a burst of explosion shook the entire ground, like it was an earthquake, once again.

After the explosion, the man responsible for the guard pointed to the pit in front of them and said: “Sir, over there!”

Everyone looked at the direction where he pointed his finger at and saw the mass of glowing dark red color thing came out from the pit.

After that thing filled the pit, it immediately spread around. It burnt everything on its path.

The leading man, at a lost, cried: “Why is there a lava here?”

The surging material that came out from the pit and gave off massive heat was actually molten lava.

“Sir, we need to get out of here, right now. There could be a volcanic eruption here.” The man shouted.

Looking at the geological material that continued to well up, the leading man finally nodded his head and then walked away with his people.

At this time, the more than ten people who have fled into the woods were still in the dark, not knowing what just happened. In their mad rush to escape, after determining no one was chasing them, they finally stopped.

Some of them began to unlock the few who haven't had the time to open their handcuffs. Rei Li personally went to one of them to unlock the handcuffs from behind.

“Thank you, boss.” That dark group member very gratefully looked back at him.

Rei Li smiled and said: “We are all brothers, no need for you to thank me.”

Suddenly, that dark group member felt a sharp pain coming from both of his hands.

Hearing his voice, everyone immediately turned over. The several dark group members who stood behind that man saw that the handcuffs were still unlocked. Moreover, a sharp dagger pierced through both of his hands. And the person who did this was none other than Rei Li.

For this incident, all dark group members were stunned. They did not understand why Rei Li would do such a thing.

“Boss, what are you doing?” That dark group members looked at him with an aggrieved look.

Rei Li sneered: “You still have the nerve to ask me what am I

doing? The Black Dragon has kept you for more than twenty years, but no one thought that you're even lower than a beast."

A fear flashed through that dark group member's eyes, but he immediately said: "We went through life and death with you, why are you doing this to me?"

"Do you still want to pretend? Very well, I will let you die with eyes close." With that, Rei Li suddenly pulled out that dagger and then cut through the skin on that man's left shoulder.

In the aftermath of a soul-stirring scream, on the spot on that dark group member's left shoulder, Rei Li inserted two of his fingers and began to dig.

Feeling an intense pain, that dark group member screamed again. The others looked blankly at Rei Li's action.

After a while, Rei Li pulled out a finger-sized thing with his fingers and held it out in front of that dark group member: "Do you think I don't know that you've been using this signal transmitter to notify our location to those people?"

That dark group member's face pale. Ignoring the pain from his left shoulder, he cried and said: "Boss, I didn't mean to betray you. Please consider my years of risking my life for you and let me go."

Rei Li very emotionally grabbed his collar and said: "You have the nerve to mention this? The Black Dragon have kept you for more than twenty years, but you actually did such a thing. Do you know how many brothers have you killed because of this? If today those people tried to kill us, who is going to let us off?"

"Boss, I beg you, please let me go." Seeing the rage in Rei Li's eyes, that man became desperate.

Rei Li let go of him and said in a very distressed tone: "For our previous friendship's sake, I will keep your corpse intact." With that, he raised his gun and shot that man in the head.

After that sound of a single gunshot, that dark group member

slowly fell to the ground.

“Bury his body.” Rei Li said to the nearby two dark group members.

The two dark group member walked over quietly.

“The rest of you go prepare the plane and wait for us.” Rei Li somewhat wearily said.

The other members immediately complied, walking toward the beach.

Fifteen minutes later, after the two dark group members buried the body, Rei Li suddenly said to them: “Do you have any regret at joining the Black Dragon? I hope you will tell me the truth.”

One member shook his head and said: “We are all orphans who grew up in Black Dragon. Beside this, we have no other place to go.”

Another member did not speak, but his eyes showed his agreement.

Rei Li walked forward, tapped them on the shoulders and said: “If, someday, you find another place that you want to go, just let me know, I will let you go.”

“Thank you, boss.” Those two members together bowed to him.

“Okay, you two can go wait for me at the aircraft, I want some time alone.”

After saluting him, they left.

Looking at the pile of bulging mound before him, Rei Li quietly stood there motionless.

“Heart of a man. In this world, the most difficult thing to grasp is the heart of a man.” In this quiet woods, a male voice suddenly sounded.

“Master, you came.” Rei Li looked back, pleasantly surprised. He

saw a middle-aged man stood behind him, Lei Yin in his mask.

“Master, are you alright?” Rei Li looked at him with worry.

Lei Yin smiled, “Since I am standing here and talking to you, of course, I am fine.”

Chapter 217 - Rain

“Master, you can control that power now?” Rei Li said, pleasantly surprised.

Lei Yin shook his head, “No, this is nothing but good luck. In that half a month in Sweden, in order to cope with the possible appearance of the super espers, I began to try to control that energy. Maybe because I survived two years ago, I found out that the energy seemed to have an inexplicable change. I tried to gently guide the output of that energy with my internal force and stopped it when it reached a certain level. While doing so can indeed achieve both the ability to use a portion of that power without getting it out of control, but the balance between the two is very fragile; If it’s not well controlled even a little bit, that energy will immediately strike back. That night when I vomited blood, I was not faking it, it was nearly out of control that time.”

After hearing this, Rei Li can’t help but let out a sigh, “Master, thankfully you’re all right this time. What about the site?”

“It has already been completely sealed by the lava.”

“Lava?”

Lei Yin nodded, “Yes. At that time when I spread the explosives in that site, I found out the area was close to volcanic layer, that’s why there are natural hot springs in the vicinity. As long as a hole is created in the active layer by a blast, the lava below will well up. So I concentrated on putting the explosives on the weakest point. You should know about the rest.”

“So, the whole site is sealed up?” Rei Li cannot help but feel a bit disappointed.

“This is the best result. The things inside cannot be used by today’s technology, even if they can be used, it will only be abused for the military. According to our previous plan, we should now be

able to enter the negotiating phase.”

Rei Li thought for a moment and then said: “Master, Do you think they really believe this is an accident?”

“No, it is dubious at best. But now the site has been destroyed, for them, there is no need to waste manpower and resource to catch you. Now our only leverages are their shady experimental videos and data files. These should be able to force them to stop pursuing you. We’re running out of time, you should go back.”

“What about you, master?”

“Right now, I certainly can’t show myself in front of other people. Otherwise, everyone will know this is a setup. Don’t worry, since I can come here by myself, I naturally have a way to leave. After a time, I will find you, but before that, you need to be careful.” After tapping him on the shoulder Lei Yin slowly walked away.

After Lei Yin disappeared, Rei Li cheered up a bit and immediately ran toward where they parked their plane.

—

No one knew when it began; On the internet suddenly appeared a strange video clip.

In this clip, people can see that some people were doing a strange experiment. But the object of the experiment was actually human.

Although the clip was only a few minutes, it was surprisingly clear. Not only that, over time, more and more similar clips began to appear on the internet, moreover, the content was increasingly bloody and nauseating.

In less than a week, the clips have spread like wildfire all over the world, becoming the trending topic.

There were those who said the experimental clips were fake. But more people thought that they were real because no special effect

can make such realistic experimental scenes.

If these were true, then where did those inhuman experiments come from?

These video clips not only caused great reactions from the common folk, they also aroused the interest of the government. More and more people began to look for the original source of these clips. Unfortunately, no one knew where these video clips came from. They seemed to be suddenly spread on the internet.

News or newspapers may be subject to state regulation and control but the internet belongs to the world. As the sensation from these clips continued to increase by the proliferation of share button, some people began to be afraid.

They knew that these video clips were just a very small part of videos or information that were leaked by people, who intentionally hid some of the most crucial parts. If the leaker fully disclosed all the videos and data, the consequences would be absolutely unimaginable.

—

Hearing the knock from outside the door, the middle-aged man put down the newspaper in his hands and then said: “Come in.”

The one entering the room was a middle-aged man in a white gown. He said to the man sitting on the sofa: “Your excellency, I have just received a call from Rei. He said things went well, the other side accepted our conditions.”

Lei Yin sipped the tea and said: “Things temporarily come to an end. As long as those pieces of evidence are in our hands, they are still going to be restless all day. We need to be careful in the future, as long as we put our guard down even a little bit, they will come and bite us again.”

Chang'an nodded his head: “I understand, your excellency.”

Lei Yin stood up and walked to the window watching the outside

rain, which gradually subsided. After a few minutes, he said to himself: “Looks like the rain is almost over.”

Chang'an smiled and picked up the newspaper on the table.

“Kazumi, can you help me find this book?” A handsome guy, who attracted women's eyes wherever he went, went over to a bookstore employee and said.

Kazumi, who finished reorganizing the bookshelf, wrinkled her brows, took out a small book with a pen from her uniform and said: “Please tell me the title of the book that you wish to find.”

Ogata Yasuda casually mentioned a book title and then lowered his face to gaze at the girl busily copying the book title in the book.

Looking at her up close in her natural light blue uniform, he began to somewhat appreciate the rule established by the bookstore owner that required the employee to wear the uniform. Since that first time he saw her in a dress in the restaurant, he had never seen her in a skirt again. Regarding this extremely reluctant to dress up girl, he really was helpless. Fortunately, this bookstore uniform was a kind of half-skirt uniform. Although it can't be compared to her good figure.

After she copied the title, Kazumi quietly walked to the front of the computer to query for the book.

Looking at the looming slender legs under her skirt uniform, Ogata Yasuda suddenly wanted to see what would this overly conservative girl look like in a miniskirt.

After finding the location of the book, Kazumi walked to the other side. Yasuda immediately went up to her side.

After vigorously putting a book on the bookshelf, a girl wearing the same uniform grunted, “I really don't understand what does Yasuda like in that woman, who has a forever deadpan face.”

From nearby shelves stocked with new books, another girl came up and said: “A vain woman like her will not have a good end. I

think Yasuda is just playing with her. Before long, Yasuda will dump her. At school, people said that she seduced Yasuda, what a shameless b*tch.”

The previous girl sneered, “If she didn’t do something like that, how could Yasuda be confused by her?”

“You guys don’t talk nonsense, Kazumi is not like what you said.” Take Asasei walked up to them and emotionally said.

But that girl said in disdain, “You are her friend, of course, you would help her speak up. By the way, if I remember correctly, wasn’t Yasuda good with you for a time? But I don’t know why he just doesn’t speak to you again. How do you feel about your friend robbing away your favorite guy?”

“Don’t, don’t talk nonsense.” Take Asasei’s anger came out through her eyes as tears.

Seeing her like this, that girl looked smug, “Oh, our princess looks very sad, is it because what we said about the relationship?”

Take Asasei was about to open her mouth to refute, but suddenly, a hand grabbed her right hand, then a cold female voice came from her side: “Little Take, leave them alone. Quarreling with this bimbo girl will only lower your IQ.”

“What, what did you say? Say that one more time if you dare.” That woman suddenly gritted her teeth and looked at Kazumi.

Kazumi lightly said: “Don’t you understand the meaning of these very simple words? Sorry, it seems like I still overestimate your IQ. But never mind, it doesn’t matter if you don’t have a brain, as long as you have a body, that’s enough. There are many men whose IQs are not much different than you and would like a woman like you. If it still doesn’t work, you can go to Shinjuku to do compensation dating, there should be a lot of horny old men there.”

“You shameless slut! I will make you regret what you just said.” That girl’s body trembled, seemingly ready to rush at Kazumi.

“Unable to accept other people’s opinion, it really is your style. By the way, just so you know, I am a black belt in Karate in High School.” After that, Kazumi suddenly took a step forward.

Seeing her suddenly came over to them, the two girls were horrified and took two steps back.

After looking at them with her without-temperature eyes, Kazumi coldly said, “Before I am really angry, why don’t you two get lost.”

Awed by her aura, the two girls dared not say anything, turned around and walked away.

After scaring them off, Kazumi went back to Take Asasei’s side and said: “Are you okay?”

Still with tears filled eyes, Take Assei excitedly held her hand and said: “Kazumi, you’re so awesome just now. Are you really a black belt in Karate?”

After handing her a tissue, Kazumi laughed: “Fool, I was just lying to them. In High School, I was so busy with my study, how could I have the time to practice Karate?”

Take Asasei was wiping away her tears as she said: “Are you really just lying to them? Just now, you looked like you’re really good in Karate.”

Kazumi smiled, “Just like when we encounter a wild beast, if you’re afraid and run back, they will immediately pounce on you and bite you. But if you show no fear, they dare not attack you. Haven’t you learned this in your Biology class in High School?”

Take Asasei could not help but smile, “Come on, how could the Biology class in High School teach about this thing?”

Seeing that her friend had resumed her normal look, Kazumi said: “Ok, let’s get back to work, otherwise, the manager would have to curse at us.”

Take Asasei spat out her tongue and continued her unfinished work.

Secretly watching the scene from the beginning not far away from there, Ogata Yasuda's eyes were suddenly suffused with a strange look.

This woman always gave him an unexpected feeling. The pretty girls that he saw were too much, and many of them have had relationships with him. But a special girl like her was the first that he encountered. She has a calmness and astuteness that did not match her age, a one of a kind who did not seem to need any help from men, but still has a good very strong self-esteem. Because of this strong self-esteem, she did not need to dress up to attract the attention of other men, did not need to take into account about the relationship and need not tolerate other people's rudeness. This was one of the women who was difficult to grasp. But at the same time, she was also a woman of marvelous attraction. Yasuda has never wanted a woman so badly like this.

He quietly went behind Kazumi. Looking at her slender and beautiful figure, Yasuda had the impulse to hug her tightly from behind, an impulse that has disappeared from his heart for many years.

After finding the book, Kazumi was ready to take it to that man, only to find that he was standing behind her and was looking at her with an unknown look.

"Sir, the book that you're looking for is here." Kazumi gave that book to him.

"Thank you." After taking the book, Yasuda caressed the cover with his fingers.

Kazumi ignored him, turned away and went back to the unfinished bookshelf where the other guests jumbled the books there.

After looking up to glance at her, Yasuda once again stepped forward to come to her side.

Hearing the sound of approaching footsteps, Kazumi knew he was coming. But, she lowered her head and continued her work, pretending not to know.

In another corner of the bookstore, Take Asasei was looking at them with a complex look.

“Kazumi, how about we have a cup of coffee after work?” Yasuda suddenly said.

Kazumi appeared to be totally unable to hear him, her hands did not stop even for a moment.

Yasuda somewhat depressingly leaned his shoulder on the bookshelf: “Until now, you still don’t believe me?”

Finally, after she finished stacking the books in order, Kazumi turned around to look at him. After a while, she said: “You know, every time you come, little Take will be unhappy. Please do not come again, okay?”

Yasuda held his gaze on her: “As long as you agree to be my girlfriend, I promise I will never come here again.”

Kazumi’s expression turned cold, “Are you threatening me?”

“That’s not what I mean.”

“Just look for other people, such an ordinary woman like me is not worth your time. There are a lot of pretty girls out there, keep your sweet words for them.” With that, she walked to another shelf.

Yasuda ran up to take her hand and said: “Kazumi....”

But before he finished, Kazumi forcefully pulled her hand back, took two steps back and then glared at him, “I’m warning you, if you dare to touch me again next time, I will not be polite.”

Yasuda can only stare at her as she left.

In the evening after work, inside the female staff locker room, Take Asasei hesitantly looked at her friend who was changing her clothes.

After a while, she finally mustered up enough courage to say: “Kazumi, actually....Actually, you need not worry about me. I knew from the very beginning that he never likes me. So even if the two of you ended up together, I won’t be angry.”

Looking at the face of this excited girl, Kazumi good-naturedly said with a smile: “Why do you think I want to be with him? I told you, whether his is sincere or not, it has nothing to do with me. Think about it, a young master like him, even if he really is interested in a woman, she will just be his flavor of the week. As soon as the novelty is over, wouldn’t the end result be the same? A woman need not only love, a sense of security is also very important. Stop thinking about it, let’s go.” After that, Kazumi began to lock her locker.

Take Asasei looked at her enviously, “Kazumi, why are you always so rational?”

Kazumi gently tapped her head and said with a smile, “Fool.”

After walking out of the bookstore, sure enough, Take Asasei once again saw Ogata Yasuda, as always, stood outside waiting for them. Seeing them out, he immediately came over.

Kazumi pretended not to know him and pulled Take Asasei away as they walked toward the bus stop.

Knowing that she won’t be taking his car, Ogata Yasuda bitterly walked back to his car.

When the two were dozens of meters away from the bus stop, all of a sudden, a taxi stopped not far ahead of them. Then, from the rear door, came down a man in a short sleeve shirt.

After that man got off the car, he said a few words to the taxi driver and then walked toward the two girls.

Looking at the gradually approaching man, tears gradually welled up in Kazumi's eyes. When that man was close enough that she was able to see the smile on the corner of his mouth, her tears finally slowly streamed down from her eyes.

"Kazumi, I'm back." The man said with a smile.

Hearing that familiar voice, Kazumi's tears continued to surge out like a broken faucet.

Looking at the usually sensible girl who, at that moment, was crying like a child as she tightly hugged a stranger, Ogata Yasuda who was sitting inside a sports car, could not help but feel a tingling sensation that he cannot endure.

Fortunately, he finally came back safely. Standing next to Kazumi, Take Asasei showed a gratified smile.

Chapter 218 - Voice

“Brother, when did you come back?” Arriving at Lei Yin’s apartment, before she even sat down, Kazumi immediately asked a question. Previously in the Taxi, because of Take Asasei’s presence, she did not ask any question.

“Just got off the plane.” Lei Yin said while yawned. Although previously he had asked Rei Li to add more manpower for the protection of Kazumi, Rumi, and the others, he wanted to confirm it himself before he can feel assured, but because there was still some unfinished business, he can’t immediately go back to Naoko.

After a moment of silence, Kazumi said in a low voice: “After coming back this time, are you going to go out again?”

“Things have been handled for the most part, so I should not need to go out again.”

Kazumi’s face suddenly lit up, “Do you really mean it?”

Lei Yin smiled and nodded.

Kazumi’s eyes began to turn red, but she immediately lowered her head, not wanting him to see.

After a while, when she calmed her emotion down a bit, Kazumi looked up and said: “Brother, I’ll make you something to eat, okay?”

Although he had already eaten on the plane, the meal portion was very small, coupled with being asked again, he suddenly felt hungry. Therefore, Lei Yin agreed.

“Wait a minute, I’ll be quick.” Kazumi very happily stood up and went toward the refrigerator.

Because Lei Yin was out for nearly three months, most of the food inside the refrigerator have expired and were already thrown away by Kazumi. Fortunately, there were still some fresh eggs and

noodles that she bought the day before yesterday. So, she took these things and went to the kitchen.

Watching the pot of water that was slowly being boiled, Kazumi's heart was in peace, the corner of her mouth revealed a trace of a very relaxed smile.

Thank God brother finally came back without incident.

For two months, he has been out for two entire months. In these two months, not only I did not receive even a single phone call from him, I did not even know where he is.

After she had heard his conversation with Sasako-sensei, she was no longer the ignorant little sister. She began to vaguely know some of the things that were hidden behind her brother's back. Therefore she intuitively knew that in this recent trip to overseas, her brother was going to deal with some very dangerous things.

This idea made her feel very uneasy, and this uneasy feeling would only get worse as times went on.

Although she can make up excuses so that Rumi would not worry about him, she was unable to make herself at ease. She was really scared; Scared that she could no longer hear his familiar voice, no longer see that kind of smile.

Now, he finally came back and all that she was worried about did not happen.

While she was thinking about things, the water finally boiled. She put the noodles into the hot water and then use the chopsticks to gently stir so as not to let them stick together. While waiting for the noodles to cook, she opened two eggs, put them together with the noodles and added some seasonings. Soon, a pot of egg noodles finally cooked. After she took off the apron, Kazumi put the egg noodles inside the bowl and brought it to the living room on a tray.

When she arrived at the living room and was about to speak, she found out that Lei Yin had fallen asleep on the couch.

After putting the noodles on the table, Kazumi turned off the TV with the remote and then slowly sat down next to him.

He must be very tired. Kazumi tenderly watched her peacefully sleeping brother.

Brother, do you know? Everyone thinks that I am strong, but they don't know, that's because I have you by my side.

Kazumi gently put her head on his shoulder and then quietly looked at his not so handsome face.

—

“B*stard, where have you been these past two months? You didn't even make a phone call, I thought you were dead.” In the campus cafeteria, Takeda grabbed Lei Yin by the collar and excitedly shouted.

“Idiot, let go of me, you're ruining my clothes.” Lei Yin can almost hear the sound of the buttons on his collar that was about to break.

“I care about you too much, if you can't give me a reasonable explanation, I'll never let you go.” As Takeda yelled these words, Lei Yin tragically found that a button has been ripped off.

At this time, Yoshikawa who was sitting nearby, leisurely said: “Hey, you two, don't do this thing in the middle of this large crowd. Otherwise, people will think that you two have a certain kind of relationship.”

Seeing that guy said such remarks while drinking tea, Lei Yin exasperatedly said, “You, this bastard, only know how to gloat on the side. And you, why won't you let go of me!” Lei Yin knocked Takeda's head rather hard.

This move was really effective, the rebellious youth screamed, let go of his collar and, after clutching his head, began to loudly curse.

Lei Yin ignored him, pulled a chair and sat down.

After cursing for a while, feeling a bit lost, he sat down and silently stared at this guy who disappeared for more than two months.

Kazumi, who was sitting nearby, covered her mouth to laugh for a moment and then gave her brother the bag in her hands.

Lei Yin casually took that and pulled out a beautifully wrapped gift box and then placed it in front of Takeda, “A souvenir.”

“Don’t think you can wriggle out of this just by giving me this gift.”

“You guys also have the souvenirs.” Lei Yin pulled out a few gifts from the bag and gave it to Yoshikawa, Akira Shiraisi and Take Asasei.

“Is it for me? Thank you!” Take Asasei was pleasantly surprised to take the gift.

Suddenly, Takeda’s scream came from the side, “Is, is this the legendary limited edition dual-gun fuel lighter?” The rebellious youth cannot believe the exquisitely designed cigarette lighter in his hand.

“Sure enough, you know the value of things. According to the sales staff, this is one of the earliest pearls series, only 3000 in the world. But the value of this lighter can only be appreciated by a smoker.”

Takeda immediately clicked the lighter to open the lid and, after a while, said: “It really is the dual-gun lighter. Masashi, you are too kind.”

Seeing that he was about to rush over to hug him, Lei Yin immediately held him back into his seat, “Sit down. If you dare to come over, I’ll take back that lighter.”

Takeda obediently sat, not daring to get up; His hands clasped that lighter, playing with it. While playing, his mouth continued to send praise, he has completely forgotten the that he just criticized

his friend a moment ago.

Yoshikawa and Akira Shiraishi respectively got a beautifully-etched-with-pattern pen and a Swiss army knife. Meanwhile, Take Asasei got a gold brooch from him.

After the meal, Lei Yin and the others stood up and were about to leave.

After leaving for more than two months, the college did not seem to have any change, only that Sasako-sensei, who was the object of obsession by so many male students and male teachers, has resigned. Apart from Lei Yin, no one knew where she went.

For this beautiful woman's sudden departure, Takeda was one of the most unwilling. But strictly speaking, this guy was only obsessed with Sasako-sensei's beauty and hot body, let alone the so-called true feeling, so not long after she left, he soon returned to normal.

But for Lei Yin, although Sasako-sensei has gone, the issue that was left behind by her cannot be solved yet. That problem was like a ticking time bomb, he never knew when it would explode, so Lei Yin was trying to find the way to solve this problem to eliminate the trouble in the future.

Perhaps he needed to use their power.

Looking at Lei Yin's thought-filled eyes, Kazumi cannot help but worry and quietly asked: "Brother, what's wrong?"

Lei Yin said with a smile: "It's nothing, don't worry about it."

"Em." Kazumi replied with a sound, but her two hands unconsciously held his arm. She was

afraid her brother would go out and do some dangerous things.

"Yasuda, why you seem so cold to me recently and never ask me out? Did you get acquainted with other girls?" A hundred meters away in front of them, a beautiful young girl was tugging the hand

of a physically attractive man like a spoiled brat.

“Do not bother me.”

“”What’s with that attitude? When you chased me, didn’t you treat me very gently? Why do you become like this? Do you really like another girl?”

“This has nothing to do with you, Ka, Kazumi....” Ogata Yasuda was surprised to see Kazumi that was walking closer and closer to him.

“Kazumi, is this your friend?” Lei Yin turned his head and asked.

“No, don’t mind him,” Kazumi whispered some words and then continued to walk forward.

Ogata Yasuda broke away from that girl’s hand and arrived in front of her: “Kazumi, hear me out....”

Kazumi coldly said: “Your things have nothing to do with me, please move aside.”

But Ogata Yasuda did not seem to hear her, just tightly staring at her clinging to Lei Yin’s arm.

Watching this guy’s action from the start, Takeda found him not pleasing to his eyes; He immediately went over and loudly said: “Hey, she told you to move aside, didn’t you hear it?”

Some time ago, he heard the rumor of a famous playboy who was pursuing Kazumi, but because of the distance between the two faculties, he has not had the chance to meet him, and now he can finally see him himself.

“Kazumi, is he your boyfriend?” While talking, Ogata Yasuda stared at Lei Yin like he was his father’s killer, he recognized the guy as the one that Kazumi hugged last night.

Kazumi looked at him coldly, “Your things have nothing to do with me, likewise, you have no right to interfere with my business.”

“Kazumi, how good is this guy? Is it because of him that you always refuse me?” Ogata Yasuda excitedly looked at her. The scene last night where Kazumi cried and flew into this man’s arms re-emerged in his mind, the inexplicable tingling once again showed up.

At this time, the girl seemed to have understood, she immediately came and loudly said: “Yasuda, your attitude toward me changed because of this woman?”

“Shut up.” Ogata Yasuda was irritated and impatiently shouted.

That girl was shocked. After a while, she cried and said: “You actually become like this because of this woman? You are too much.”

Not wanting to look at this farce, Kazumi pulled Lei Yin to sidestep Yasuda.

Seeing her wanting to leave, Yasuda immediately reached out, wanting to pull her.

Just as he was about to pull her arm, a hand suddenly grabbed his wrist tightly. Then, from the side came a young male voice: “Although I am not aware of the details of the situation, a playboy like you, who is entangled with other girls, is not eligible to pursue my sister.”

Initially angered by the man, when Ogata Yasuda heard his words, he suddenly froze.

“Did...Did you just say, sister? You are Kazumi’s brother?” His eyes were wide open as he looked at Lei Yin.

Kind of gave him a disgusted look, Kazumi said to Lei Yin in a low voice: “Brother, ignore him, let’s get out of here.”

Lei Yin let go of his hand.

Standing at the rear, Take Asasei briefly gave him a complex look and left with the others.

Ogata Yasuda did not try to catch up, he has an odd smile on his face.

After a long time, seeing that Yasuda did not come to coax her, the girl was angered. But when she came close, she heard him murmured.

“Did she just called him brother? So, they’re actually brother and sister. I remember now, she seems to have a brother who also studies in this Teikyo University, how could I forget this kind of thing....”

“Yasuda, you bastard!” After listening to Yasuda’s murmur, the girl ran away in anger.

Meanwhile, as he walked, Takeda scolded, “This is the first time I see such a shameless guy, I really don’t understand what do those girls like in that man.”

Yoshikawa, his buddy for more than ten years, knew what he was thinking, squinted his eyes and said: “I think you’re jealous, am I right? From a professional point of view, a guy like him is very easy to get girls. He has a good look and he drives a well-known sports car, coupled with how good he is in flirting with girls, how can this guy not be called a ladies killer? Compared to him, I am also lacking. But don’t get me wrong, I just lack in the money department. As you know, my stubborn old man at home, afraid that I would overspend, will only give me a very little amount of pocket money each month, so I don’t even dare to buy a good car.”

Ashamed, the concerned party Takeda called out angrily, “B*stard, who would envy that dude? So what if he drives a branded sports car? What’s the big deal? One day I will drive my car here, at that time I will be more popular than him. Oh, why didn’t I bring my car here?” Takeda regretfully said.

Lei Yin said to Kazumi: “Although the suitor is a playboy, this also means that people have begun to appreciate you. It seems like not everyone is blind.

Kazumi curled her lips and said, “Who wants to be appreciated by a playboy? A man like him who thinks so highly of himself just makes me want to throw up.”

“That make sense, a playboy is inherently unreliable. In the future, the man who can be my brother-in-law, in addition to being nice to you, he must also pass my requirement. Yes, at the very least, he must be able to not be flattened by me in one minute.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“Kazumi’s brother, are you serious?” Take Asasei interrupted, asking with a worried face.

“What, do you want to recommend a candidate?” Lei Yin teased her back.

“Ah, no.”

Kazumi very discontentedly said: “Do you want to sell me? Are you getting tired of me?”

“Let me think about it. Hmm, if I were to sell you now, who will help me clean my apartment?”

“Hate, you actually treat me as a cleaner.” Kazumi stared at him with clenched teeth.

“I cannot swear I never thought about it. You see, if I want to hire a cleaner, I have to pay that cleaner. But you are free. There is a big difference between the two.” Lei Yin seriously said.

Kazumi was pushed to the limit, immediately bit his shoulder.

“Hey, are you kidding me, that was just a joke, ah, you really know how to bite. Let me go, that hurts.” Lei Yin cried out.

While walking in front of them, Take Asasei could not help but laugh out loud. She looked back and was surprised to see the Kazumi, who usually has an indifference look, angrily bit her brother’s shoulder.

Amazed, Takeda suddenly felt Kazumi was a bit different.

However, he couldn't tell where it was exactly.

—

Hearing the doorbell, Lei Yin got up from the sofa and walked to the door.

Looking through the cat eye, he saw, standing on the outside wearing a hat that shielded the eyes, a very young girl.

“Who are you looking for?” Lei Yin opened the door and carefully looked at her.

“Are you Mr. Gennai?”

“Yes I am, what can I do for you?”

“I have something urgent that I need to talk to you, can I go in and talk about it?” The woman, when speaking, always bowed her head.

Lei Yin cast her a glance and said: “Please come in.”

Into the living room, the woman took off her hat, revealing a beautiful yet unfamiliar face for Lei Yin.

“Please sit down.”

“Thank you.” The woman sat down on the couch.

“Please wait a moment, I'll get you a cup of tea.”

“No need.”

Lei Yin said nothing, just walked around behind the sofa to the kitchen.

The woman who was sitting on the couch suddenly felt something cold touching her neck, at the same time, she felt a hand tightly clutching her throat.

“Don't move, or I'll kill you.” “Mr. Gennai's” cold voice floated into her.

This sudden turn of events made her tremble in panic, but the

hand that was clutching her throat kept her from making any sound.

“Tell me, who are you?” Lei Yin loosened his hand on her throat a bit so that she could speak.

“What, what are you doing?” That woman cried in fear.

“What an awesome acting. Long time no see, Sasako-sensei.” Lei Yin suddenly said softly in her ear.

“I don’t understand what you are talking about, my name is Tomoji, not Sasako.” That woman nervously explained.

LeiYin sneered, “You know what? When you cried just now, you forgot to change your voice and accidentally revealed your original voice.”

Hearing this sentence, that woman suddenly stopped crying, sighed and said: “I never thought you could actually see through me so fast, it’s not fun at all. But that thing you said is wrong. I didn’t forget to change my voice, but when you grasp my throat, for a moment I can’t change my voice. For you to be able to do this, looks like you’re also a master at changing your voice.” While saying that, the woman’s voice gradually changed, unlike her previous voice. By the end of her sentences, her voice has completely changed into Sasako’s voice.

Chapter 219 - Intuition

Lei Yin said dryly: “That’s not the point, the point is, why aren’t you dead?” On the island before the explosion occurred, from his hiding spot in the forest, Lei Yin saw her and another man went into the pit. After the explosion when the remain was buried by lava, he clearly saw that no one had the time to escape from the pit. But now, how can he explain the woman sitting on the sofa here? Although the look was different, she was still the same exact woman that he saw that night.

Sasako said in a low voice: “Just like my first guest, it was indeed a setup. I have to say, that setup was perfect, now those guys, though still have some doubt about this matter, there was no way they could be sure that it was not an accident. Do you know how I found out about it?”

“This is another question that I want to ask.”

“Actually it’s very simple, because of Rei Li’s eyes. Women and men are different, rather than thinking rationally, they sometimes trust their intuition more. At the time, I found that Rei Li’s eyes were very strange, the look of desperately trying to think of a way to escape did not appear in his eyes. How should I describe his eyes? Hmm, yes, he was like a man preparing to watch a show. Although he only revealed this look in a flash and nonchalant way, I already knew that there was definitely a problem. So, when we arrived at the bottom of the pit, I made up an excuse to stay outside and did not go with them. When I hear the voice “Compared to a long and tedious question, I prefer multiple choice, so it’s better for you to explain.””

“You are as unromantic as ever. In my previous explanation, you must be wondering why those guys, knowing that you are Yan Yuxiao’s disciple, did not come to trouble you? Actually, there’s only one reason. And that is, I simply did not report your true identity to them. I explained to them that you are just a dedicated

contact person on Black Dragon's Japanese division, so of course they won't waste manpower and resources to come here to trouble a small fry like you. In fact, I came to you this time just wanting to make a joke out of it. Now to answer your question, the reason why I want to fake my death is because my mission is completed."

"Mission?" Hearing this word, Lei Yin's mind seemed to have caught something.

Sasako's expression suddenly became strangely serious, "General Yang Xiao wanted me to pass this on you, thank you very much for secretly sending to us the many years of the United States research data about the alien. He also said, if in the future, you need something, please feel free to inform him. As long as it is within our power, we will definitely try to help."

Hearing her words, Lei Yin could not help but inwardly shiver; He asked in a deep voice: "Who are you really? How did you know about this?" While speaking, his murderous aura surged up.

Sasako smiled and said: "I am affiliated with the Chinese Ministry of Defence, a member of the Special Operation Department 27th, code-named 23. My mission was to investigate the top-secret military technology that was being developed by the United States. My mission is classified as top secret, but General Yang Xiao is very grateful to everything that you have done, so he makes an exception to show you my identity."

Lei Yin looked at her doubtfully, "Were you really being sent from there to the US as an undercover agent? What method do you have to prove your identity?"

"Didn't you once wish for General Yang Xiao that you hope he can send some Espers to protect Rei Li? I am that Esper he sent for you. In my top left pocket, there is a letter for you from him. His full explanation is in that letter."

Lei Yin opened her top left pocket and, sure enough, there was a sealed letter.

After carefully read that letter with his free hand, Lei Yin slowly let go of her.

“Your real name is Zhang Qian?” Lei Yin sat in front of her and said.

“Yes.” In Zhang Qian’s eyes, there was not the previous kind of seductive obsequious look, leaving only a smile that was as tranquil as clear water.

“How long have you been undercover?” Lei Yin said while using a lighter to burn the letter.

Zhang Qian’s eyes revealed a trace of painful expression. “Since I was 18 years old. Looking back, it has been more than nine years. To be honest, if it wasn’t for surviving the fusion experiment, it would have been impossible for me to reach their inner circles. They would only use the selected few in this top secret department.”

Lei Yin went silent. While the other eighteen-year-old girls were busying themselves in falling in love or studying, she was living in a crisis-ridden, struggling for survival environment. This pain definitely cannot be said clearly in just one or two words. If she were to be discovered, no country would acknowledge her existence.

“Besides you, are there other people like you?”

“I am sorry, I cannot answer this question without the permission from the top.”

“Forget it, I was just casually asking. Can you tell me, how did you know about the alien information?”

“Yes, General Yang Xiao said that I can tell you as long as its concern about the alien information. Since fifty years ago after the UFO crash in New Mexico, almost all countries were paying attention to this matter. Paper cannot wrap up the fire, and after so many years of investigations, we finally confirmed the existence

of the aliens. Moreover, we also know that the US have developed technologies based on the weapons that they recovered from the crashed UFO. For this reason, I have been assigned by the above to infiltrate inside them to get more data, or if necessary, to destroy it.”

Because this thing has been very clear, Lei Yin no longer asked, so he asked another question, “Then how about the research study?”

“That is the work of the research department, I am not very clear about it. But, I do know that those things are far beyond today’s civilization technological capability. It is impossible to completely understand and use it in a short period of time. But no matter what, you gave us hope.”

Lei Yin paused for a moment and then said: “To be honest, I still don’t know whether that decision is right or wrong. Because those things are not suitable for use in the current era.”

Zhang Qian said softly: “Who knows what would happen in the future. Tomorrow I am going to perform my new mission to protect Rei Li, tonight can you let me have a rest here?”

Lei Yin nodded his head.

“Thank you, can I use your bathroom? I want to take a shower.”

“There are some new towels inside, feel free to use.”

“Thank you.” Zhang Qian slowly walked to the bathroom.

Hearing the ringing sound of rushing water from the bathroom, Lei Yin smiled, Never thought this woman is actually a double agent. But by now, it seemed like he was safe. As long as those people did not know his true identity or came up with a new one, they will no longer look for “Gennai Masashi” to give him trouble. He was not afraid that others will look him for trouble, he was afraid they would lay their hands on the people around him, that was the last thing he wanted to happen.

After a while, the sound of water from the bathroom stopped. It

seemed like she was about to come out.

“Masashi, can you come here for a moment?” Suddenly, from the bathroom came her screaming voice.

Lei Yin came to the bathroom door and asked: “What’s the matter?”

Suddenly, the lights in the bathroom and the living room flickered a few times and all of a sudden went out. The whole apartment went dark.

At the same time, the bathroom door was opened, and then, a warm body went into Lei Yin’s arms. At the same time, a pair of slender arms clasped around his waist tightly.

Lei Yin did not say anything, just quietly standing there. In the dark, it seemed like one could hear the beating sound of the two people’s hearts.

After a wordless silent, Zhang Qian who was still in Lei Yin’s arms gently said to him: “Tonight can you hug me?”

Slowly, Lei Yin completely put his arms around her seductive body.

“You know what? I am really really tired. In there, I actually volunteered to participate in the fusion experiment. In addition to wanting the chance to get into their inner group, at the time, I actually wanted to die. But the irony is, in the face of mortality rate as high as ninety-nine percent, I actually survived. The one who wanted to survive died, but the one that wanted to die survived, things are always so unexpected.

You should know, being a female spy, my body is frequently used as a tool. In so many years, I had sex countless of times with numerous men. Sometimes I feel really dirty, like a cheap whore.” She said, slightly quivered.

Lei Yen felt a warm liquid on his chest.

Gently stroking her hair, Lei Yin said softly: “The dirty ones are those men, I don’t think you’re dirty at all.”

“Do you really mean it?” The woman whispered in his arms.

“Yes.” Lei Yin gently kissed her forehead.

Zhang Qian tremblingly said: “Then, do you want me? Once is enough, could you?”

Without much thought, Lei Yin picked her up and walked back to his room.

Zhang Qian put her arms around his neck, pressing her face against his chest and listening to his steady, strong heartbeat.

After putting her on the bed, Lei Yin slowly took off her clothes.

Hearing him taking off her clothes, Zhang Qian felt her body turned hot, her heart thumped faster and faster.

Sitting on the bed, Lei Yin pulled her into his arms and then starting her from her forehead, to the bridge of her nose, his kiss got lower and lower.

When he kissed her lips, Zhang Qian actively opened her cherry lips, Lei Yin also unceremoniously invaded her territory.

After the constant tease from Lei Yin, Zhang Qian finally unable to resist and welcome his tongue. The two people’s tongues constantly tangled inside their mouths like two conjoined creatures.

After an unknown amount of time, when the two parted their lips, Zhang Qian almost came to the point of choking.

At this time, Lei Yin’s hands reached into her back and started to slowly caress her smooth skin.

With his hands constantly on the move, Zhang Qian’s breathing became more and more rapid. After a while, she finally could not help but gently moan.

Moving forward, his hands finally reached the most feminine position of a woman and he slowly began to play with her proud twin peaks.

“Do you know why most men especially prefer this area?” Lei Yin continued to rub, kneading the two most sensitive points and said in her ear.

“W, why? Ah....”

“Because many men, in their deep consciousness, all want to go back to being a baby in their mother’s care.” When speaking, Lei Yin’s hand slowly moved down.

Moving to her lower abdomen position, he suddenly stroked her smooth rounded thighs.

“Your legs are really beautiful.” His hand continued to climb upward.

“Do you like it?”

“Such a beautiful pair of legs, no man won’t like them.”

“Don’t....”

“Don’t want me to touch them or don’t want to stop?” Even when speaking, his fingers did not stop moving.

“Please....Don’t do that, I can’t stand it anymore....” She felt that all the spot that was traced by this man’s hand would leave a kindling sensation that was hard to extinguish

“This is my revenge for all the teasing that you previously gave me, Sasako-sensei, and the night is still very long.”

“D*mn, ah....Don’t go there....”

The next morning, when Zhang Qian opened her eyes, she did not see Lei Yin.

He’s gone? Her eyes showed a disappointed expression.

Suddenly, she heard footsteps coming from the outside. Then,

the door was opened and a neatly dressed Lei Yin came in.

“I thought you had already gone.” Zhang Qian looked at him in surprise.

Lei Yin smiled, “This is my apartment, where else can I go? Get up and eat your breakfast.”

“You can make breakfast?” Zhang Qian said, somewhat surprised.

“Besides having a child, I can do a lot of stuff, but usually I am too lazy to do it.” Lei Yin put her clothes on the bed.

Zhang Qian was about to take it, only to find that Lei Yin was looking at him with a smile. Her face reddened, she cannot help but charmingly scold: “Still not go out of the room?”

“A dressing beauty is a rare beauty, so of course I want to stay and have a look at it. Hurry up, or the breakfast will get cold.”

Knowing that this rogue will not go out, she had to get dressed under the bed sheet.

When she got down from the bed, she felt weak in the legs, as if she had no strength left. After turning her head to give him a stern look, her face could not help but flush. This guy was like an old rogue who had held himself for more than ten years, if it not for her desperately begged him to stop, she would not have known when he would stop. Thinking of this, her heart was filled with a burst of inexplicable shame.

Unexpectedly, the man’s breakfast turned out surprisingly delicious. After breakfast, she quietly picked up the dishes and went to the kitchen to wash them.

After washing the dishes, she said to him: “Can you buy a newspaper for me? I have not read newspapers for days.”

“Sure.” After deeply glancing at her, Lei Yin slowly walked out.

When Lei Yin came back holding the newspaper, Zhang Qian has

already left.

Looking at the deserted living room, Lei Yin sighed softly.

Chapter 220 - Negotiation

In the kitchen, watching the-attentively-cooking-things Naoko, Lei Yin had a feeling that was hard to describe.

In his view, a woman in an apron was the most beautiful.

Although this view undoubtedly has some trace of male chauvinism in it, for a millennium-old ghost who lived in the Song Dynasty to the present, some ideas were difficult to change.

Walking toward her and putting his hands around her slender waist, Lei Yin said softly in her ear: “Are you tired?”

Naoko shook her head and then said softly: “Wait a moment, you will soon be able to eat.”

“Don’t cook too much food, just make it enough to eat, okay?”

“Em.” Naoko’s heart filled with a thick sense of sweet. She knew he did not want her to exert too much, but he did not know, cooking for the person that she loved was actually a pleasure to her.

At the dinner table, watching his hungry look, Naoko’s heart was filled with happiness.

Great, he’s finally back safely. Thinking of this, a trace of tears quietly, unknowingly fell from her eyes.

When she felt wet on her face, she quickly bowed her head and wiped it with her sleeve.

Just then, she felt a hand wrapped around her body, and then, she felt her face pressed against his chest.

“I am sorry to keep you waiting for so long.” Lei Yin softly said in her ear.

“Lei, sorry, I didn’t want to cry. But I can’t help it....” By this time Naoko was choked with sobs.

“Don’t worry, just cry, let it all out.” Lei Yin’s left hand was hugging her waist while his right hand gently stroking her hair.

Naoko finally could not bear it anymore, she tightly clasped his waist with her hands, letting her tears soaked his clothes on the chest.

The living room went quiet, between the Heaven and Earth it seemed like there was only this embracing couple.

After an unknown amount of time, Naoko slowly pulled her head back and found a large area of his clothes was already wet. She cannot help but blush and she whispered like a child that was caught doing something wrong: “I am sorry, I am going to get a set of clothes for you to change.” With that, she hurriedly stood up.

Lei Yin immediately hugged her, “Fool, don’t worry about it, let’s eat first, okay?”

Looking at his filled-with-pity eyes, Naoko felt sour in her nose and has the urge to cry.

After cleaning the tableware, Naoko came out of the kitchen and saw him laying on the carpet with back against the foot of the sofa watching television, his favorite relaxation pose.

“Come, sit here.” Lei Yin smiled at her and patted his own thigh.

Naoko blushed a bit and gave him a charming angry glance. Finally, she lowered her head and slowly walked toward him.

Really in love with her shy and charming look; When he saw her blushing as she sat down on his leg, Lei Yin could not resist tightly holding her in his arms.

“Naoko.”

“What, what’s wrong?” Feeling her lover blew some steam on her face, Naoko felt her whole body turned weak.

“I want you.” Lei Yin’s hand probed into her clothes, slowly stroking her delicate skin. Absence makes the heart grow fonder,

not to mention the woman in front of him that was so so incredibly seductive; Finally, Lei Yin has been driven beyond the limit that he can tolerate.

“We, we can’t.” Naoko tremblingly said.

“Why? Don’t tell me it is best not to do strenuous exercise just after we finished the meal.”

“Because....I, I am having my period.”

Hearing this, Lei Yin wryly smiled, This is indeed the most terrible reason.

Not daring to tease her anymore, he pulled out his mischievous hand and then took her in his arms, being gentle and caring.

“I am sorry, Lei,” Naoko whispered her apology.

“Fool, no need to apologize for such a thing.” Lei Yin endearingly kissed her on the forehead.

“Lei....” Feeling her mood surged up, Naoko tightly hugged him as if wanting to integrate herself into him.

When she slightly calmed down, Lei Yin gently asked: “Did you get use to live with miss Sakurai?”

“Em. Miss Sakurai is a good person and she’s good to me.”

“Do you want to know who she is? I can tell you everything you want to know.” Lei Yin gently stroked her tear-stained beautiful face. “No, I don’t want to know. My grandmother once said to my mother, there are some things that the more you don’t know about them the better.” With that, Naoko buried her head back into his chest.

“Although this statement is not necessarily good or bad, I have to admit, your grandmother is a wise person.”

“I heard from my mother; Although my grandmother rarely spoke, she was a very clever person. She once served as a Miko in Ise Shrine. Unfortunately, at the age of 26, she died because of a

heart attack. I have only seen her appearance in the picture.”

Hearing her slightly depressed voice, Lei Yin kissed her face and then picked her up, “After sitting for so long, you should be very tired, why don’t we go to sleep?”

“Em.” Naoko meekly nodded.

After putting her in the bed, Lei Yin suddenly remembered something. He pulled out a letter from his pocket and gave it to her, “This is this morning’s express letter, your name is written as its recipient.”

“Can you help me read it?” Naoko did not want to release her hands on him.

“Hey, if I open it and see that it’s a love letter, I’d be jealous.”

“Help me read it, okay?” Naoko chuckled.

Every time he heard her playful, pampered voice, Lei Yin’s heartbeat slightly accelerated and suddenly felt an impulse. This time, it was not an exception. He said with a wry smile: “If you’re going to continue to act like this, I will be tempted. Don’t you know how hard and painful it is to have something that you can only see but can not eat?”

Naoko looked at him, very pleased with herself.

Having no way to refuse her, Lei Yin had to open the letter.

After reading the letter, he handed it to her and said: “This is the letter from the Japanese Young Writer Association. They said they appreciate the articles that you published in the woman’s magazine column and therefore, want to invite you to participate in their annual Conference in Nagoya. They also said they will be responsible for the round-trip ticket and hotel accommodation. If you decide to go, you can call the number on the letter.”

“No, I don’t want to go anywhere, I want to be with you.” Naoko buried her head in his arms. This time, the prospect of being away

from him really scared her.

After thinking about it, Lei Yin said: “What if I go with you?”

“What did you say?” Naoko raised her head and looked at him in surprise.

“I mean, I will go with you to Nagoya. I have been looking for a chance to go out with you, this is that chance. After arriving there, it does not matter if you go to the conference or not, anyway, we’ll pay the tickets and accommodation ourselves. What do you think?” Because he had made her worried about him for so long, Lei Yin wanted to take this opportunity to make it up.

“What about your grade? You haven’t attended the class for more than two months. If we go, it would affect your study.” Naoko worryingly said.

“Relax, I don’t have to worry about my grades. As long as I pass the final exam, I can still continue my study as normal.”

“Really?” She knew her lover’s background was very deep, but she still has some concern and just wanted to confirm.

“Rest assured, there will be no problem.”

“If there is not going to be a problem, in Nagoya, I want to take you to see my grandma, okay?” Hearing that he really can go with her, Naoko’s face was somewhat red with excitement.

“Yes, I think it’s time for her to see her grandson-in-law with her own eyes.” He remembered she had a grandmother in Nagoya who operate an antique shop.

With a flushed face, Naoko retreated her face back into his arms.

Lei Yin smiled, lowered his head and kissed her hair, and then buried his head on her neck, immersing himself in her sweet fragrance.

After a while, Naoko charmingly scolded near his ear: “It’s all your fault for telling me that you will go to Nagoya with me,

making me unable to sleep.”

“Hey, I am the most uncomfortable one here. Even though I have a sweet smelling great beauty in my arms, I can only see and can’t move my hands.” Lei Yin indignantly said.

A burst of sweet feeling filled Naoko’s heart; She gently scolded “Hate,” and then tried to curl up her body like a cat in his arms.

—

“What, you want to go out?” Hearing what Lei Yin said, Kazumi stood up in surprise.

“Don’t get me wrong, this time I will go with Naoko.”

Hearing this explanation, Kazumi was finally relieved, “Hate, why don’t you say it earlier.”

“Kazumi’s brother, what about your grades?” Take Asasei was a good student, the first thing that came to her mind was the grade problem.

“I am very close to each of the lecturers; They agreed that as long as I am able to pass the final exam, I can continue my study as normal.” Lei Yin talked nonsense.

“Is that it?” Take Asasei’s face was filled with envy.

Although Kazumi did not believe his nonsense, she was not worried about little things like grade. She just managed to wait until he came back, yet he was about to go out again. Although this time it would just be for a week or so, and there should be nothing dangerous, but she still felt a bit unhappy.

“When will you go?” Kazumi asked.

“In three days. Why don’t you go with us?”

“I can’t, I don’t want to see some R-rated scene there. Moreover, unlike someone here, I am a good student who attends class regularly.” Kazumi said with a smile.

“Hey, even if there is this scene, it will not be staged in front of you.”

“Okay. You guys have fun, just remember to buy some souvenirs.”

After he left the apartment, Take Asasei enviously said: “Your brother is really good to Naoko, oh, if only I could find a good boyfriend that would treat me like that.”

Kazumi did not speak. At this stage, she has basically accepted the fact that Naoko-sensei will become her sister-in-law. But every time she thought about the look of that little fool when she saw her brother, her heart was filled with some inexplicable pain.

“Kazumi, let’s go. Otherwise, we’re going to be late.”

“Okay.”

After the two locked the apartment door, they walked toward the bookstore to do their part-time job.

Tonight, there was not too many people in the bookstore, so they can relax a bit. But even so, there will be a few pretty girls that would come here now and then.

They mostly came, not to read books, but to see the guy in a sports car that would often appear in this bookstore.

With a handsome look and tall stature, this handsome rich guy who rode a sports car is the modern version of prince charming in the eyes of many girls.

After a few months, more and more girls who came to this bookstore knew about the existence of this good-looking guy. So many girls deliberately dressed to the nines to come to the bookstore to look at him, hoping to attract his attention. But because of this, these beautiful girls also attracted other boys who came here with similar ulterior motive.

Ogata Yasuda did not know that because he often came here to

look for Kazumi, the bookstore's turnover improved by more than 5%. The manager of this bookstore was so happy.

"I want to talk to you about something." When Kazumi, wearing the bookstore uniform, was stocking the new books, a young woman's voice suddenly came from the side.

Kazumi turned around and saw that person was actually Mingyu Jizi.

Regarding this arrogant, unruly girl, Kazumi has classified her as one of those unreasonable creatures; So she said dryly: "Sorry, I am working right now, please don't bother me."

Mingyu Jizi's eyes flashed a trace of anger, but she quickly controlled her anger and said: "But your manager does not think so."

Kazumi felt a bit strange and turned to look at the front counter. Only to see the half bald, fat, middle-aged man constantly made a 'go on' gesture toward her, meaning that she should talk with her. Seeing this, Kazumi could not help but dishearten. She began to think whether she should or should not remain in this bookstore doing a part-time job.

This time, Mingyu Jizi continued: "I will not keep you for a long time, let's go to the lounge over there."

Knowing that if she ignored this 'princess,' she would continue to bother her, Kazumi thought for a moment and finally followed her to the customer lounge.

After taking her seat, Mingyu Jizi said: "I don't want to beat around the bush, I want you to leave Ogata Yasuda. You can open your price. As long as it is reasonable, I will give it to you." She took out a checkbook from her handbag and lay it on the table.

Kazumi felt a headache, Why are these rich people always thinking about things so self-righteously?

"Too shy to say it? It doesn't matter, you can write any amount

you want in this blank check. If I feel it is reasonable, I will sign it.” Mingyu Jizi threw the checkbook in front of her.

Kazumi’s mouth slightly twitched and then said: “Are you really that determine to ask me to leave that guy, instead of trying to get that guy disappear from my eyes?”

Mingyu Jizi coldly said: “Do you think I’d believe that, if you don’t resort to some kind of method, Yasuda would really fancy such a woman like you? I advise you to stop while you’re ahead. Did it ever occur to you that you are a woman with an ordinary family background? Even if Yasuda really wants to be with you, there won’t be any good result. You see nothing but his money only, but I can tell you for sure, you have no chance to marry him. The upper-class society in this world is not as simple as you think. Yasuda’s father and his family will not allow their future heir to marry a woman with an ordinary background like you. To become his wife, the woman must be a perfect match for him. To be honest, I’ve always regarded him as the ideal future husband candidate. The one who worthy of him is only me. Therefore, I advise you to sever any kind of attachment to him, take the money and leave.”

Kazumi did not speak, just quietly looking at her. After a while, she suddenly said: “Do you have 10 yen?”

“What?” Mingyu Jizi did not understand what she wanted to do with it.

“Oh, right, you are a big miss, so you should not have this kind of small exchange. What about 100 yen, or 500 yen, do you have it?”

Although completely unaware of what she wanted to do, Mingyu Jizi dug out a 500 coin from her handbag.

“Give it to me, okay?” Kazumi said.

Mingyu Jizi, without much thought, gave her the coin.

After she took the coin, Kazumi nodded and said: “Ok, deal. From

now on, Ogata Yasuda is yours. Later on, keep him on a tight leash, don't let him run around, especially here." With that, she stood up, ready to leave.

"Wait a minute, what do you mean?" Thinking that she was being fooled, Mingyu Jizi angrily looked at her.

"You still don't understand? Just now I sold Ogata Yasuda for 500 yen to you. You can do whatever you want with him. However, I'll give you one piece of advice, it is best to tie him up with chains or lock him up in a cage. In short, don't let him run around." After patiently explaining to her, Kazumi turned around and walked away.

Mingyu Jizi flew into a rage and shouted: "Gennai Kazumi, stop! O, Ogata...." She can't believe that the one standing at the door watching her was her 'future husband candidate.'

Why is he here? Didn't he go to uncle Maeyama's banquet? Mingyu Jizi was scared as she looked at the strange and indifferent look of Ogata Yasuda.

"O, Ogata-senpai, how come you're here?" Mingyu Jizi has a quick reaction, she immediately smiled at him and said.

Ogata Yasuda coldly said: "Good thing I left the party earlier, otherwise, I would have missed such a wonderful scene."

Mingyu Jizi quickly explained: "Ogata-senpai, listen to me...."

"No need to explain, I've heard everything that you just said. I don't know when did you start to have the qualification to meddle in my affairs."

"Sorry to interrupt, as an outsider, I have no qualification to speak, but can you two move your quarrel to the outside? This is a reading place, the two please conduct yourself with dignity." Kazumi suddenly said aloud.

"B*tch, shut your mouth off!" Mingyu Jizi can't wait to rush to tear her rotten mouth.

Hearing what Mingyu Jizi just said, Ogata Yasuda scowled and coldly said: “The one who needs to shut up is you.”

“Ogata-senpai, do not be confused by this woman, she is a scheming woman.”

“I told you to shut up, didn’t you hear?”

Seeing that their quarrel was getting more and more fierce, Kazumi immediately made a very irresponsible decision: Ignoring them.

Even if they scared away all the guests or blew this place up, it has nothing to do with her. Big deal, if that dead fatty fired her, she could just go find another part-time job elsewhere. Thinking about this, she walked out of the lounge without saying anything.

Seeing that Kazumi was walking away, Ogata Yasuda immediately stopped in front of her and said: “Kazumi, listen to me, don’t listen to this woman. I really like you.”

Kazumi turned her face to gave him a look and suddenly slapped him on the shoulder and then said: “Little brother Ogata, I have sold you to this beautiful sister. Later on, you have to listen to her, ok. Remember, do not come here looking for me, understand?” With that, she bypassed him and went out.

Looking at her back, Ogata Yasuda felt angry and funny at the same time, What does this woman take me for?

Chapter 221 - Onsen

After exiting the airport, looking at the somewhat pale Naoko, Lei Yin could not help but a bit worry, “Are you exhausted?”

Naoko smiled and shook her head, and then said: “I am okay, just having some air sickness, I’ll be fine in just a while.”

Lei Yin was not assured, so he said: “Let’s sit in the lounge for a minute, and then we can ride the bus to the hotel.”

“No, I am really fine.”

“Behave.” With that, with right hand carrying the luggage and left hand holding her slender waist, Lei Yin walked to the airport lounge with Naoko.

Feeling the thoughtfulness of her sweetheart, Naoko’s heart was both touched and filled with sweetness. She leaned her head on his shoulder while putting her arms around his waist.

At this time the man responsible for the reception noticed that Naoko walked away instead of walking to his side, so he immediately ran over and said: “Miss Hase, our bus will soon arrive, please come with me, okay?”

Before Naoko could answer, Lei Yin said to him: “My girlfriend is a bit uncomfortable, I want to take her to the lounge to take a break. After a moment, we will go to the hotel, you don’t have to wait for us.”

“Are you okay, miss Naoko?” That man really saw her pale face.

“Thank you for your concern, Mr. Maruyama, I just need to rest for a bit.” Naoko politely answered him.

“If so, then we will go first, if there’s anything then please contact me.”

“Thank you, Mr. Maruyama.”

When Maruyama returned to the gathering point, a 35-36-year-

old man asked him: “Mr. Maruyama, what happens to Miss Hase?”

“It’s like this Mr. Iketsu, Miss Hase Naoko does not feel well, so she wants to go to the airport lounge to take a break. After a minute, they will go by car to the hotel to meet with us.”

“It turns out to be so.” Iketsu looked up at the figure that just walked into the lounge.

Then, came the voice of a young man from the side, “Sure enough, a beautiful woman’s body is relatively weak. Tsk, unexpectedly, this recently very popular female columnist ‘Shimizu’ (Clear water) is very beautiful. If I knew, I’d go after her.” This was a tall lanky man who wore glasses.

“It’s not too late. What’s wrong, are you afraid? Oh, this is not like your character at all, Murai.” A buxom woman interrupted from the side.

“Who says I am afraid? But, what you said make sense, in any case, she just has a boyfriend and not yet married. Besides, her boyfriend is very average.” Murai who wore glasses said while touching his chin.

“How come the car has not come yet? I am really tired of waiting.” A 40-something, heavily makeup woman complained from the side.

“Miss Aso, please wait a moment, it should come very soon.” Maruyama, who was responsible for the reception, immediately said with a smile.

“Every year it’s like this, can’t you improve your work efficiency a little bit?” The woman surnamed Aso very impatiently said.

“I am sorry, next time we will pay attention to it.”

“You say that same thing every year, but it’s still the same.”

Maruyama had to keep apologizing.

“Forget it. Let me ask you, this year why would you include that

woman, who does not have a qualification as a writer and who just put a few articles in the magazine, with us?" Aso asked.

"Do you mean miss Hase?"

"Still trying to be stupid, in addition to her who else?"

"It's like this, Miss Hase Naoko's essays in the magazine column are getting more and more popular with women readers, so our president decided to invite her to attend this meeting."

Aso sneered. "Humph, she's nothing more than a newcomer who just made her debut, I want to see how long she can stay popular."

Hearing this conversation, standing not far away, Akagi Miho whispered to Iketsu and Murai: "That woman is really here. I really admire her cheekiness. She's already forty years old, yet every year she still participates in the young writer's conference."

"There's nothing we can do, she is the wife of the former president, so the current president has to give her some face." Murai spread out his hands and said. "I heard that the former president divorced her. Is this true?" Iketsu butted in.

"Who knows, but with that grass-is-always-greener-on-the-other-side personality of that old goat, it is not impossible. In those days, that old guy really liked to grope me, but fortunately, he retired early because of that matter." Akagi Miho gleefully said.

Watching Akagi Miho's plump figure, Murai could not help but swallow a bit of his saliva.

Finally, the bus came to pick them up, so this group of more than 20 popular or semi-popular young writers from Tokyo entered the bus one by one.

When the Autumn came, the weather began to turn cold. The Young Writers Association has arranged a very special place for their accommodations not far from Nagoya, in a hotel in Gifu County where there was an Onsen next to it.

Regarding this arrangement, most people were very satisfied, only Aso who complained about not staying in a proper hotel instead of an old-fashioned one.

After more than twenty minutes of rest in the airport lounge, Naoko said to Lei Yin: “Lei, I’m fine now.”

Seeing her face has returned to normal, Lei Yin, feeling relieved, took her out of the airport to go by bus.

On the bus to the hotel, Naoko leaned on his shoulder and said: “Lei, I am really happy.”

Lei Yin bowed and kissed her forehead, “If you think those people are too noisy, we’ll move to another hotel. Anyway, there’re plenty of hotels here.”

Naoko did not speak, just quietly looking at him. After a while, with blushing cheeks, she suddenly extended her neck and kissed his lips, and then she withdrew her head back into his arms.

Lei Yin smiled and gently stroked her hair on the back of her neck.

The City of Gero in Gifu Prefecture was famous for its onsens. They rode the bus from Nagoya all the way to the north for two hours until they reach Gero, their destination.

Using the address given by Maruyama who was in charge of the reception, Lei Yin directly took Naoko to their hotel.

This was a medium sized old style hotel, with antique-style design and some old wooden decor on the doorway, showing this hotel was at least decades old.

After walking in, and after negotiating their stay with the hotel servicewoman, she immediately brought them to their booked double room.

Although the Association of Young Writers was willing to pay for the tickets, along with the accommodations, Lei Yin did not want

to owe to any of them, so he paid for his and Naoko's tickets, as well as the hotel room. And because he did not like too much noise, he deliberately booked a relatively quiet room.

"Take a good night's rest first. I'll wake you up when we're going to eat." After putting the luggage, Lei Yin said to Naoko.

"Where are you going?" Coming to this new environment, Naoko did not want to be separated from Lei Yin even for a minute.

"Fool, I am not going anywhere, just go to sleep."

"Lei, sleep with me, okay?" She pleaded softly in his arms.

Lei Yin has no other choice but to pick her up to the bed, take off his coat and then lie next to her.

Seeing that he has agreed her request, Naoko very happily clung to her waist.

After he covered the bed sheet over her body, Lei Yin said in her ear: "You, are getting more and more spoiled."

Naoko stifled a smile as she lay her face on his chest.

After comfortably sleeping for the night, Naoko, her whole person, became radiant and more beautiful and alluring. When she walked to the hotel's dining area with Lei Yin, all the men stared at her.

"Do you mind if we sit here?" When Lei Yin and Naoko was having their meals, the buxom Akagi Miho and the glasses Murai came over.

"Hello Miss Akagi, Mr. Murai." Naoko politely greeted them.

"Miss Hase, I am your loyal reader. You're the best writer that I have ever seen to write essays about women." Akagi Miho sat next to Naoko, acting as if they were best friends. Seeing her sat down, Murai also took a seat.

"You flatter me, compared to your series of novels, I am simply nothing." Naoko modestly replied.

At this time, Murai interrupted: “Although I am risking a ridicule from miss Hase, I actually like what you wrote in the women’s column, even though I am a man.”

“You flatter me, Mr. Murai.”

“I wonder if you have any thoughts of writing a novel? Based on your literary talent, it should be popular.” Murai continued to try to flatter her.

“For now, I don’t have any thoughts about that.”

“I know many friends from the publishing world. If you ever wanted to publish a novel, you can always look for me. This is my business card, if you ever need anything, just call me anytime.” Murai handed over a business card.

“Thank you.” Naoko did not know how to deal with his excessive enthusiasm.

“Naoko, your food is getting cold.” Lei Yin placed a piece of food to her bowl. He also used this a pretext to fend off the man who continued to ask questions.

Seeing that the one who interrupted was, justifiably, the boyfriend, although Murai was a bit angry, there was nothing he can do.

“If I may ask, what line of work are you in, Mr. Gennai?” Akagi Miho turned to look at Lei Yin and asked.

Lei Yin casually answered: “Sometimes I play in the stock market, so you can call me a freelancer.”

“It is a rare profession, but it should be a little easier than us writers. For us, we are always being forced to finish the manuscript by a bunch of people who are basically no different than debt collectors. When you don’t have any selling point anymore, not only you don’t have the retirement pension, you also can’t apply for unemployment insurance. We usually stay up late, but not only we don’t have overtime pay, even on holidays, we

need to sit inside our workroom, self-abusing ourselves. Moreover, after painstakingly wrote our work, we also have to accept those smug and self-righteous but never publish any work, those people who called themselves critics to point fingers at us.” Akagi Miho was getting more and more excited until finally she simply called the waiter to bring her another glass of red wine.

“Tell me, don’t you think that we writers are miserable?” After a round of complaining, Akagi Miho, while drinking, patted Lei Yin on the shoulder.

Regarding this mature woman, Lei Yin felt a bit funny.

Seeing that Naoko, while looking at Akagi Miho, has a trace of sympathy look, Murai dryly coughed and said to this talkative peer of him, “Miho, you’re drinking too much.”

“Bah, do you think I am like you who can’t handle alcohol? Do you guys know what happens the last time I went drinking with this guy? Two. He just drank two glass of wine and he immediately fell, in the presence of other people, no less. All the people that day saw it. Don’t you guys think that he lost his face there?” Akagi Miho said as she patted the table, laughing.

Seeing that this woman saying an embarrassing thing about him in front of this beautiful girl, Murai can’t help but angry out of shame and immediately went over, wanting to pull her away, “Miho, you’re drunk. I am sorry, my friend is drunk, I need to take her back.”

“Let go of me, I am not drunk. Do you think everyone is so lame like you? Miss Hase, let’s take a dip in the onsen.” With that, she tried to pull Naoko to go with her.

“Miss Akagi, you should take a rest.” Watching her reek-of-alcohol look, quickly urged.

“Don’t worry, I am a good drinker, even better than many men. Let’s go. While we’re there, we can talk about women things.”

Akagi continued to pull her.

Naoko had no way to refuse, so he can only say to Lei Yin: “Masashi, I am going to go with miss Akagi, please wait for me in the room, okay?”

Lei Yin nodded his head, “If you need something, call me on the phone.”

“I know.” Naoko walked away with Akagi Miho.

At this time, most of the people have left the dining room. After eating two mouthfuls, Lei Yin went back to the room.

In the women-only spa locker room, Naoko was changing into the bathrobe. After she finished changing and turned around, she saw Akagi Miho strangely staring at her without blinking.

“What is it, Miss Akagi?” Naoko asked, somewhat puzzled.

“It’s nothing. Let’s go.” With that, she led her to the Onsen.

No one else was in this hot spring, the surrounding was very quiet.

After trying the water temperature by hand, Akagi Miho took off her bathrobe and placed it on the wooden basin. Then she went inside the Onsen naked. After she went down, Naoko took off her bathrobe and followed her.

Gero Onsen was referred to as Japan’s three famous Onsen. Because, in addition to its clean water that was free of impurities, it was also because it can be used as the treatment for some rheumatic diseases, sports injuries, and has a special curative effect on neuralgia and other diseases.

Although she has none of these illnesses, when her whole body soaked in the Onsen, Naoko still felt very comfortable.

Akagi Miho stretched herself in the water and said: “Looks like the arrangement of this gathering is pretty good.”

Naoko Ask: “Miss Akagi, how many times have you attended this

gathering?”

“Five times including this. When I participate this gathering for the first time, I was dying of excitement, thinking that I was really valued. But later on, after participating for several times, I learn that it’s just a sympathy-type welfare.”

Naoko smiled despite herself.

At this time, Akagi Miho suddenly said: “Miss Hase, let me help you massage your shoulders, my technique is really good.”

“How can this be? There is no need.”

“No need to be polite, you can reciprocate it later. Come on, relax.” With that, she went to Naoko’s side, put her hands on her shoulders and slowly massage them.

Seeing how insistent she was, Naoko cannot help but relent.

After a while, Akagi Miho said: “Miss Hase, your body is really good, this is the first time I see such a beautiful body. Your body is so beautiful that even I, as a woman, can’t help but move.”

Hearing her straightforward praise, Naoko cannot help but redden, “You flatter me, Miss Akagi, your figure is also very good.”

“I really mean it, I rarely compliment other people’s figure. You are the most beautiful woman I have ever seen.”

“You overpraise me.”

Naoko found that Akagi Miho’s hand slowly moved from her shoulders down to her armpits, and was about to move forward.

“Miss Hase, can I ask you a question?”

“What is it?” Naoko was surprised to find Akagi Miho’s hand really moved forward toward her chest while her other hand slowly moved downward her lower abdomen.

“Can your boyfriend satisfy you like this?” Akagi Miho’s hand continued to move down.

“Miss Akagi, please let go of me,” Naoko said in a panic.

“Miss Hase, relax, I’ll give you a joy that no man can give. You should know, there are some things that only a woman can understand.” While speaking, her hand never stop moving downward.

But at this time, Naoko forcefully jerked her hands away and immediately went to the other side of the Onsen, and then looked at her in full alert.

“Miss Akagi, please control yourself.”

Seeing that she broke free from her, Akagi Miho was a bit disappointed.

After a while, she said to Naoko: “Miss Hase, do not be nervous. I won’t force myself on other people. Since you don’t like it, I won’t touch you again.”

Although she said that, Naoko did not dare to get close to her again. If her bathrobe was not in the direction of Akagi Miho, she would have left this Onsen as soon as possible.

Seeing how nervous she was, Akagi Miho said with a smile: “Actually, I just want you to experience some of the things that you have never experienced before, but I never thought your reaction would be so big. Rest assured, since I said won’t touch again then I won’t mess around anymore.”

After deeply glancing at her, Naoko said: “Miss Akagi, this behavior is wrong.”

“I am not really a lesbian, I just occasionally do that kind of thing with other women. Because I saw that you’re the most beautiful woman I have ever seen, I couldn’t help myself. It seems like you really like your boyfriend because your reaction is the biggest among the women that I came across.”

“Beside him, I will absolutely not let anyone touch me, even women.”

“Humph, what good are those men? They’re just animals who are lustful for a beauty; When you have no value or is no longer beautiful, they will get rid of you like a trash.” Akagi Miho said with a sneer.

Glancing at her, Naoko said: “Although I don’t know why would you have this idea, he is definitely not like that. I am sorry, I have to go, please move aside.”

Akagi Miho smiled and very graciously stepped aside.

Seeing the path cleared, Naoko immediately went over to pick her bathrobe, put it on, and went to the locker room in a hurry.

Seeing her somewhat ‘run away in panic’ appearance, Akagi Miho smiled a bit and then buried her head in the water.

When she returned to her room, she saw Lei Yin watching TV, so she immediately ran over to him.

Holding her in his arms, Lei Yin asked in a low voice: “What happened?”

Looking up with eyes full of concern, Naoko slowly told him everything.

After she finished, Lei Yin frowned.

“Lei, please don’t hurt her, I can see that she’s just a pitiful woman.” Naoko watched her sweetheart’s face with worry.

Seeing her eyes, Lei Yin gently stroked her hair, “Don’t worry, I won’t do anything to her.”

Hearing his words, Naoko felt slightly relieved, “Lei, I was really scared just now. I used to listen about it, but this is the first time I encountered such a person.”

“It’s all right now.” Lei Yin softly said in her ear to comfort her.

“Lei...” Naoko deeply buried her head in his arms.

Chapter 222 - Antique Shop (Part 2)

Nagoya is the capital of Japan's Aichi Prefecture. In size, it was second only to Tokyo, Osaka, and Yokohama.

Feeling that she was just an amateur magazine column writer and never published any books, moreover, she did not want to be seen by the readers attending the gathering, Naoko asked the venue staff to cancel her seat.

At her insistence, the forty years old Young Writer Association President finally agreed to her request.

Thus, Naoko hid in the crowd, very happily held her sweetheart's arm as they strolled the venue.

Looking at the crowd of people, Lei Yin said to her, "Let's leave this place, it's too noisy here."

Naoko hesitated, "I don't think this is appropriate, let's wait until the book signing event, and then we can leave."

"Don't worry, there are so many writers here, they won't notice if one or two are missing. Didn't you say you want to take me to see your grandma? Now is a good opportunity."

Hearing Lei Yin's words, Naoko's eyes flashed with excitement and immediately agreed.

After they walked out of the venue, Naoko said with a smile, "Ah, what a great day, it's good to be out here."

Looking at her beautiful smile, Lei Yin cannot help but lower his head to kiss her pretty face, and then said, "Didn't you just say this is not appropriate?"

Holding his arm, Naoko charmingly scolded, "Hate, you're the one who encouraged me to go out."

Lei Yin smiled and then said, "Visiting someone without bringing anything is not good, let's go buy some gifts first."

“Okay.” Seeing how attentive her sweetheart was, Naoko was very happy.

The two then went to the nearby mall to buy some gifts first.

Naoko’s grandma’s antique shop was located in Shikemichi, a small historical street in Nagoya.

At this historical street, which dates back to 18th century Japan’s mercantilist era, there was ancient warehouses, temples, and handicraft shops. It was filled with rich Japanese traditional folk style, which was one of the must-see places for tourists to visit in Nagoya.

When they arrived at the door, Lei Yin sized up this antique store. It was a typical Japanese traditional shop. The shop area was very big and has a house attached to the back. The structures were mostly made of wood and appeared antique. From Naoko’s introduction, this antique shop has more than sixty years of history. It was the crystallization of her grandfather’s effort.

After arriving here, Naoko was excited like a child. She impatiently pulled Lei Yin into the shop.

Inside the shop, they saw a middle-aged woman carefully wiping the goods on the shelves. Naoko said to the woman, “Aunt Soshi.”

Hearing the sound from behind, the woman immediately turned her head. Seeing that it was Naoko, her whole face lit up and said in a pleasant surprise, “Naoko, you’re here.”

Naoko smiled and said, “How are you?”

Ikehakura Soshi came over and took her hand, and then said, “I am fine, how about you?”

“I am doing great. Is grandma here?”

“Grandma is in the hall inside. And this is?” Ikehakura Soshi a bit strangely looked at Lei Yin.

“He is my... fiance.” Naoko’s face blushed as she made the

introduction.

“Huh?” Ikehakura Soshi was surprised, she never heard anything about Naoko’s fiance before.

After giving a shy glance to Lei Yin, Naoko whispered, “Lei, this is aunt Ikehakura Soshi who helps my grandma with this shop.” In a moment of nervousness, Naoko forgot to say her sweetheart’s official name.

Lei Yin smiled, and then said to Ikehakura Soshi, “Hello, my name is Gennai Masashi, I am Naoko’s fiance.”

Ikehakura Soshi quickly returned to normal and immediately said, “Hello, my name is Ikehakura Shoshi, nice to meet you.”

Naoko was eager to see her grandma, so she said to her, “Aunt Soshi, we are going to see grandma. Oh, I almost forgot, this is a gift for you.”

“Oh, you don’t have to do this, I am already happy to see you come.”

“It’s just a small gift.” With that, Naoko pulled Lei Yin into the house.

Looking at Naoko’s excited expression, Ikehakura Soshi cannot help but sigh. Naoko finally has a fiance, she thought.

Naoko lived in Nagoya from elementary school to high school. It can be said that she saw Naoko grew up from a well-behaved little girl to such a beautiful girl. Along with Naoko’s grandma, Ikehakura Soshi had always been worried about Naoko’s weak body since Naoko was still a child, so she hoped Naoko’s fiance would treat her good.

The house at the back was similar in style to Takeda’s house. It has a garden full of flowers in the middle and rows of wooden floors, as well as paper doors separating each room.

Naoko went to the largest room in the middle and then gently

called out, "Grandma, I am Naoko. Are you in there?"

When Naoko called out for the third time, the paper door was pushed aside and a silver-haired elderly with a kindly face walked out to see her granddaughter. After a while, she just smiled and said, "Naoko, you're back."

Naoko's eyes gradually turned red. She made a bow to the elderly and said, "Grandma, I'm back."

"Come on in and take a seat." While talking, the elderly looked at Lei Yin who stood beside Naoko.

The room's furnishing was very simple, nevertheless, as a whole, it gave people quite a serene feeling.

Inside the room, Naoko went straight to a cabinet on her own initiative. She opened the first drawer and took out a tea cup, a teapot and a can of tea. Then she walked to the next room to brew the tea.

Soon, after the tea was ready, she poured a cup and placed it in front of the elderly. And then she poured one for Lei Yin and herself.

After drinking the tea, Naoko knelt behind the elderly and began to gently massage her shoulders. As she rubbed the elderly, Naoko said, "Grandma, because some time ago I published a number of articles in a magazine, the Japanese Association of Young Writers invited me to participate in their annual young writers' conference in Nagoya. Taking advantage of that, we've come here to see you. How are you recently?"

"I am fine. What about your father and mother, are they okay?"

Naoko answered, "Father was still very busy with works, but they are in good health. Big brother and brother are also well."

"Then what about you?"

"I am fine. Please don't worry about me."

The elderly nodded in satisfaction, “Then I can rest assured. Naoko, why don’t you introduce me to this young man.”

Naoko immediately blushed, totally afraid to look at Lei Yin. She leaned over and whispered in the elderly’s ear, “Grandma, he is the man I have been waiting for.”

Hearing the reply from her granddaughter, the elderly quietly watched Lei Yin. After a while, she suddenly said to him, “Please take care of Naoko.”

Lei Yin seriously replied, “I will. Please don’t worry about it.”

“Grandma... thank you!” Hearing her grandmother’s response, Naoko was pleasantly surprised. Just then she was worried about her grandmother’s perception of Lei Yin, but now she felt relieved.

The elderly did not ask about Lei Yin’s career, family, or other problems, but just casually talking with him about trivial things in life. Seeing their interaction, Naoko became jubilant and thus acted like a pampered little girl, which she rarely showed, smiling without care by Lei Yin’s side.

After talking for quite a while, a burst of quarrel came from the store outside.

Hearing this loud argument, the elderly slightly frowned.

“Grandma, let’s go outside and see what happened, okay?” Naoko said to her.

The elderly nodded and stood up.

When the three walked into the shop, they saw a thirty-something-year-old man was arguing with Ikehakura Soshi.

At this time, the man angrily exclaimed, “Are you kidding me, I know that thing is definitely here, why don’t you take it out.”

“I am sorry, Sir, we really don’t have the thing you said.”

“That’s bullsh*t. I know you must have hidden it.”

“Sir, please be reasonable, how could we give you something that we don’t have?”

That man was furious, “Call your boss, I want to personally ask him.”

Ikehakura Soshi became somewhat impatient, “The last time you came here, I have clearly told you that we don’t have it here, but you don’t believe it. How many times do I need to say it?”

“You lied to me, bastard. Just call your boss here!” The man heavily slammed the table with his palm.

“I am the boss here, how can I help you?” The elderly walked over and said to the man.

“You’re the boss here? Are your surname Kigo?”

“Yes, I am.”

At this time, Ikehakura Soshi went over to the elderly, leaned over and whispered to her.

After hearing to what she said, the elderly carefully looked at the man and after a while, said, “Sir, can you tell me why you insist this shop has the thing that you’re looking for?”

At this time, the man has a very complicated look, as if he was struggling to decide about something. After a while, he deeply looked at the elderly and said, “I am sorry, excuse me.” After he finished saying, he turned around and walked out of the antique store.

Unable to believe the man so easily left, Ikehakura Soshi couldn’t help but feel surprised.

“Grandma, what is the thing that man looking for?” Naoko asked.

After withdrawing her gaze from that man’s back, the elderly said, “He was looking for the sacred Katana.”

“Katana? Do you mean the Katana at the shrine in the little room

in the eastern part of the house?” Naoko said is a surprise.

“Yes. The two of you come with me.” With that, she walked back inside the house.

The elderly took them to a locked small room that looked like a utility room at the eastern corner of the house.

“Naoko, do you remember this room?” At this point, the elderly suddenly said.

Naoko replied, “Of course I remember. Moreover, I also remember that you warned me to never come close to this room, under no circumstances, much less to go in.”

The elderly did not speak again. Instead, she took out a key and used the key to open the door.

After she opened the door, the elderly said, “Come with me.”

The room was dark. Apart from the door, the only source of light came from one small window. Because it was never opened for a long time, the room was filled with a faint musty smell.

The elderly slowly walked to the left wall and fumblingly searched for the light switch. After a while, they heard the “pop” sound and the fluorescent light mounted on top lit up.

“Fortunately, the light still works.” The elderly said as she walked back.

Lei Yi swept his gaze around the room. He saw a metal frame on top of a table in the middle of the room. On top of this metal frame was a long wooden box. From the color of the box, who has lost its luster, it was clear that the box was quite old.

There were few curved jades and some wormwoods on top of it, but the most impressive thing was the picture of spells which covered all around it. Combined, all of these felt very strange.

The elderly said to her granddaughter, “Naoko, when you were young, I didn’t want you to know about this thing. But now that

you've grown up, I have something to tell you. Do you remember that box?" The elderly pointed at the box on the table.

Naoko replied, "I remember there was a long sword inside that box. When I was a first grader in primary school, because the old box was full of mold and about to break, you gave me a new box and told me to put that long sword inside the new box.

"Do you know why I told you to change the box, rather than let other people or myself personally go and change it?"

"I don't know. At the time, I didn't think too much about it."

"Now I am going to tell you the reason. It is because, except for innocent children, no one else can touch that sword. Otherwise, it would be dangerous to the one who touches it."

"Dangerous? Why?" Naoko thought that the word was too serious.

The elderly patiently explained, "The owner of this sword is your grandfather's good friend, who left this sword with us. At the time, the man said that this sword absolutely cannot be touched, because this is an evil sword."

"Evil sword?" Naoko felt like she was listening to a ghost story.

"You might not believe it, but this is indeed an evil sword. According to your grandfather's best friend, any person who holds this sword will die miserably. Moreover, every once in awhile, it would cause a terrible massacre. At first, I didn't believe it either, but when something strange happened later, I cannot help but believe."

"What kind of strange thing?" Naoko unconsciously held Lei Yin's arm.

"Initially, we did not put the sword here, but on the western side. One day, your grandfather saw a worker in charge of cleaning, always watching the sword with a strange look. At first, your grandfather thought that he was mistaken, but then, he found out

that the man's action became increasingly strange. Some other workers even told him that they saw that man talked to himself. Your grandfather thought that he has some mental problems, so he dismissed him. But one night, that man came back and secretly tried to sneak in to steal something. But it wasn't long before the other workers caught him. At the time, that man repeatedly shouted, "Give that sword to me, give it to me." When the police took that man away, unexpectedly, he suddenly went crazy and even bit one of the police officer's ear. In the end, the doctor concluded that the man had a severe case of schizophrenia and put him in the mental hospital. Your grandfather thought that it might have something to do with the sword, so he kept the sword inside the box and locked it in this room for good."

A few years later, your grandfather passed away. After that, a strange thing happened again! A new handyman suddenly showed a similar behavior to the previous worker. He was also often seen talked to himself and some people even saw him wandering in front of this room. Afraid that there might be an accident, I immediately dismissed him, just like what your grandfather did. By the next evening, I had arranged a few workers to guard outside. Indeed, that same evening, the handyman secretly came back and tried to break into this room. The workers quickly subdued him and gave him over to the police."

"Did he became crazy like the previous man and bit another police?"

"No, but in the police station, the man committed suicide in the cell." Hearing this answer, Naoko became extremely afraid and shrunk her body into Lei Yin's arms even more.

The elderly then continued, "Because of these accidents, I examined the box carefully and found out that the box has been rotted by mold. I don't know if it's because of this, but just in case, I did according to your grandfather's friend's instruction, which was to find a child, that's you, by the way, to change the box. At

the time, I was afraid that something would happen to you, so I watched your action with trepidation. When you came out of the room safely, I immediately went to the nearby temple and invited a master here so that he can put a spell on that box to seal off the evil spirit. Although, at the time, I didn't know if it would be effective or not, but since then, there has been no further accident. If it was not because this sword belongs to your grandfather's good friend, I would have long thrown this sword away." After saying this, the elderly cannot help but sigh.

After hearing what her grandmother had said, Naoko cast an apprehensive glance toward that box. She never thought that the sword she had held a few years ago was actually such a scary object.

But then, she suddenly thought of something, "Grandma, since this sword has never left this room for years, how could that man know about it?"

The elderly said, "I am not clear about this either. The reason why I called you here is to tell you that if something happens to me in the future, I want you to bury the sword under the tree at the nearby temple. Your grandfather and I have helped his friend guard this sword for many years, it should be enough. I don't want this sword to hurt you or other people."

Hearing her words, Naoko suddenly tensed up, "Grandma, don't scare me, nothing will happen to you."

The elderly said with a smile, "I am not saying that something will happen to me, but I am already old; almost one hundred years. So it is up to you to deal with this thing. But you have to remember not to open the box."

Naoko finally felt relieved, "I know what to do, grandma."

At this time, Lei Yin, who has been silent all this time, suddenly said, "Can I see that sword?"

Chapter 223 – Seal

Hearing Lei Yin's words, Naoko had a scare, and the old woman gave him a strange look.

“Lei, you said you want to see that blade?” Naoko's two hands tightly grabbed his arm.

“Yes. ” Lei Yin went to the old woman and said: “Please show me the blade in the box okay?”

“Please give me a reason. ” The old woman calmly said.

“I have a friend, his family handed down a similar ominous blade, but later for some reason, the blade was gone. He once asked me to inform his family if I see the blade someday. Therefore, I want to see if that blade was the one he was talking about. ”

The old woman thought for a moment and asked: “What's your friend's name?”

“His called Nakawa Meiji, his from the Yagyuu sword faction. ” Speaking of this name, Lei Yin's eyes flashed a faint sadness, Nagakawa Meiji's real name is Nagakawa Kyuujirou, a name that made him have different thoughts.

The old woman shook her head, “Your request I'm unable to comply. This blade has a lot of strange things on it, you're the most important person to Naoko, so I can't let you take a risk. ”

Lei Yin with a sinking sound said: “That old friend when still alive, I have owed him, although he is dead now, but I want to make some compensations as far as possible and to complete his entrustment, I hope you can understand. ”

Naoko had only ever seen this eyes of Lei Yin, that was when he was in his first year of high school attending the trip to Okinawa. Now seeing this eyes again, Naoko's heart can't help but gently tremble.

When the old woman was in deep thought, Naoko loosened her lover's arm and slowly walked to her side and said: "Grandma, can I ask you to agree to him, please?"

The old woman look up at her, "Naoko, are you sure that doing this is really ok? Don't forget that this blade is very dangerous. "

Naoko looked back at her lover gently then with a firm voice said: "His wish is my wish, no matter what happened. I will go with him facing it together. Please grandma grant his request, I beg you. "

After listening to her words, the old woman sighed gently, "Well, since you insist on doing so, I can only agree. "

"Thank you grandma. " Naoko bowed to her.

Naoko went back Lei Yin's side. Putting her head on his chest and gently said: "Lei, be careful. "

"Rest assured, I'll be fine. You go out with your grandmother first. " Lei Yin lowered his head and kiss her forehead.

After a deep look at his eyes, Naoko and the old woman went out of the room.

After they went outside, Lei Yin went in front of the table, after glancing for a bit, he reach out to untied the curve jade tied to the wooden box.

Because these things are tied tightly, and in a dead knot, Lei Yin had no choice but to take out a knife to cut the cord.

The above attachments is all clean after. Only the surface of the box is left with a very strange ofuda(paper talisman).

He drew the knife in the opening location and cut the ofuda a slit.

Putting the knife away, Lei Yin slowly opened the box.

Seeing his action, Naoko that's looking outside had her whole heart raised. At this time, no one knows what will happen when the box is opened.

Finally, she saw the box was entirely opened.

At this time, everything around is very tranquil, and nothing happened. Naoko slightly relieved.

But when she looked at Lei Yin's back, she suddenly found that he seems to be a little different than usual.

At this point there's a feeling that can't be expressed in words, although because she can only see the back and can't see his face, but from his back, Naoko can clearly feel this.

Then, she saw Lei Yin extend his right hand towards the position of the hilt.

He's going to pick up the blade? A look of fear appeared in Naoko's eyes.

Remembering her grandma said those two personal experience, with absolute concern, Naoko can't help but called out: "Lei, don't..."

But before she finished, the old woman suddenly held her hand and whispered: "Do not bother him. "

Naoko did not dare to speak again, and can only worriedly and anxiously look at Lei Yin.

Finally, Lei Yin's right hand held the the hilt, and then slowly put the blade vertically.

After so many years, Naoko finally saw the full picture of the blade that she only had a little bit of impression.

It was a blade that was longer than the usual Japanese katana, and has no scabbard, with a blade of nearly one meter, the blade was rendered in a strange dark brown.

Not knowing why, seeing the blade, Naoko suddenly felt her whole body powerless, as if having anemia, with the same feeling of dizziness. Seeming to be aware of her granddaughter's situation, the old woman held her hand, while the other hand firmly held

her waist.

Having the help of the old woman, Naoko's body finally able to barely stand straight, without enough time to thank her grandma, she continued to look ahead.

At this time, Lei Yin was looking at the blade in his hand, motionless, as if he were a statue holding a blade.

The unspeakable strange feeling was becoming more and more clear, and she found that Lei Yin's body at the moment was emitting a strong sense of oppression.

Right, it is a sense of oppression, and she could now finally describe this strange feeling. She had never seen Lei Yin like this, but strangely, under this seemingly breathless invisible oppression, she felt a familiar sense of security, as if she was in his arms.

Slowly, Lei Yin put the blade in his hands horizontally and put it back in the box, and finally he closed the box.

After completing these series of actions, Lei turned around and walked out.

"Lei..." Naoko suddenly threw herself into his arms and tightly hugged him.

"Relax, I'm fine. " Lei Yin hugged her softly and comforted.

"Lei, I was really afraid. " Naoko said as she was sobbing quietly.

Lei Yin while holding her, gently touch her hair behind her neck.

Standing next to Naoko, grandma smiled and looked at them.

"Lei, is that blade is the one your friend said?" In the room where the tea had been before, Naoko asked she put a cup of freshly brewed tea in front of him.

Lei Yin shook his head, "Although it's similar as describe by my friend, but it doesn't have an inscription, so it's not the one my friend said. "

Usually, the outer position of a Japanese katana will have some inscriptions, especially blades made by some master, but that blade does not have anything.

After putting the cup down, Lei Yin said to the old woman sitting at the opposite side: “It may be a little abrupt, but I suggest you hurry the blade as soon as possible. ”

The old woman looked at him and said: “In fact, when Naoko’s grandpa was still alive, because of what happened, I advised him to do so, but he is very stubborn. He thought that since his good friend left the important object here, it can not be treated so rudely. As his surviving wife, I should follow his wish and keep this ominous blade until the day I leave. ”

“Lei, just what happened in the end?” Naoko still has a deep impression on what she just felt.

Lei Yin with a sinking sound said: “The top is attached to a very heavy death qi. ”

“Death qi?” Naoko asked a little surprised.

Holding her in his hand, Lei Yin said: “Death qi, also known as corpse qi, as the old saying. From a scientific point of view, when a person died an unnatural death, especially when killed, will sometimes release a substance in the moment of death—or should be called energy, which clings to the murder weapon or the murderer. Usually, the death qi will fade slowly along with the passing of time and eventually dissipates completely, but there are also exceptions. When a person with the same weapon constantly kill, then the accumulation of death qi will likely exceed the speed of dissipation, when the quantity of death qi reaches a certain level, there will be a qualitative change, forming the death qi that will not dissipates along with the passing of time. When this particular death qi reaches a certain quantity, it will have an unpredictable effect on the person holding the weapon, depending on how much death qi is attached to the weapon. Most likely it will

gradually make the character of the holder unknowingly become brutal or bloodthirsty. But this blade is different, the death qi attached to it is unusually heavy, if an average person picks it up, it will likely make them go mad, but there might be also other situations. ”

Hearing Lei Yin’s words, Naoko nervously shook his hand, “Then, will you be okay?”

Lei Yin patted her hand and said: “Relax, I’m fine. ”

Seeing her lover’s eyes as clear as ever, Naoko finally felt relieved.

At this time, Naoko’s grandmother suddenly said: “I listened to the original owner of that blade, that blade results from a soul-seal. Do you know what that means?”

Lei Yin gawked: “So that’s what it is, no wonder that blade will become like so. The so-called soul-seal is what Japan calls it, the real name should be called sword sacrifice. It means that when the sword or blade was just released from smelting, the caster of the sword or blade will make his own blood droops on the blade, thereby enabling the sword or blade to open. But later this practice was slowly distorted, turning one or few living people to build up into the furnace, trying to get the victim’s soul to fuse with the weapon, producing a true weapon. But those who casts swords like this are usually lunatics, and it can be said that swords or blades that have been forged in this way are already a weapon before they even kill. If you use it to kill people again, it will become like that kind of evil blade.

Another point to explain, can actually seal the blade with death qi above it and not let them spread is not because of those mantras or curved jade, but the wooden box. ”

The old woman could not help but sigh: “Then, the two people becoming like that is really affected by the blade. It was our own family that has killed them indirectly ah. ”

Lei Yin does not know how to comfort her, after all, it is the fact that although manslaughter and murder differ, the result is still the same.

“Grandma, this kind of thing no one can expect, please don’t think too much. ” Naoko went over to comfort.

“I’m a little tired, and want to take a rest. Take your time. ” The old woman held the table and stood up.

Naoko immediately help her walk to the bedroom.

Chapter 224 – Heart Knot

From Naoko's grandmother's home to returning to the hotel, Naoko's appearance seemed a bit preoccupied.

When Lei Yin came out of the bathroom, she was sitting at the bedside staring at the TV with no focus.

He went over and put her in his lap, Lei Yin asked: "Are you worried about your grandmother?"

Naoko leaned her head on his chest and said: "Her spirit is not very good, and she has no appetite. I'm really worried about her. "

Lei Yin said: "Everyone will have some heart knot, and can only be untied by themselves. For these days, we'll go over to see her, talk to her with her life experience. To untie this knot is not that difficult. "

"Em,"

"Go take a shower first, rest early tonight, you must be very tired today. "

Naoko looked up and looked at him affectionately, "Lei, thank you. "

"Fool. " Lei Yin lovingly kissed her cherry lips.

Naoko hugged his waist and slowly responded.

The kiss is very long but not intense, and Naoko's mood gradually calmed down, reveling in his gentle comfort.

After a long time, when the two lips parted, Naoko's feelings already moved up, her face flushed and with some shortness on her breathing, she lowered her head not daring to look at his eyes.

"I'll help you wash, okay?" Lei Yin whispered while using his hand to unlock the buttons on her dress.

Hearing Lei Yin's words, Naoko's breathing became more rapid.

After a while, Lei Yin put all her clothes down, revealing the perfect body of the woman that can make your breathing stops.

Putting her flat on the bed, Lei Yin carefully size up with appreciation, with his hand moving down the undulating curve on the hills and valley.

“Lei, don’t... Look at me like this. ” Feeling her lover’s eyes staying on her naked body, Naoko with both hands covered her eyes and pleaded, her body skin rushes a pink color.

Lei Yin smiled and took her whole person to the bathroom. While walking, he said onto her ears: “I will help you wash very cleanly, anywhere will not be spared. “

Naoko’s body can’t help but gently tremble.

※※※※※※※※※

The event is scheduled to be held for three consecutive days. “There you are Miss Hase, come and sit over here, there’s a vacant seat. ” Seeing Naoko, Akashiro Miho’s eyes lit brightly, immediately greeting her.

Although she doesn’t want to sit with this woman with a strange hobby, but the other have already spoken in public, so she can only go with Lei Yin.

” Sit down, Miss Hasegawa. ” Sitting beside Akashiro Miho, Murai has pulled a chair very attentively.

“I appreciate, we can sit here. Lei Yin pulled a chair on the other side of the table to let Naoko sit down and sat next to her.

Again this guy, Murai looked at Lei Yin a bit annoyed.

When they were seated, Akashiro Miho said: “Mis Hasegawa, do you know? Today a lot of people came looking for you, but unfortunately you’re not here, where did you go?”

Naoko replied: “I went to visit my grandma in Nagoya today. “

At this time, the baldy Waka interjected: “So that’s the case, Miss

Hase is really a filial person, it's now rare to see such a filial girl. I often read Miss Hase's articles, how about we find time to discuss some questions on writing? Maybe tomorrow night, then I'll be free. “

“Thanks for your well concern, Mr. Waka, I don't dare to delay your precious writing time. ” Naoko declined.

Akashiro Miho smiled and said: “Senior, you being so direct will scare the other, don't forget the other has already a boyfriend. “

Waka refuted, “I as a senior, helping out a rookie is also what I should do, just where did you think?”

“Susumu Nikaidou is also a rookie, why doesn't senior care about him so much?”

Hearing Akashiro Miho's words, the others couldn't help but laugh.

Waka looked up and glared at her.

Naoko glanced gratefully at Akashiro Miho, and she responded with a smile.

After eating, Akashiro Miho proposed to go shopping outside, and Waka and Murai also agreed. When they looked at Naoko with anticipation, she said she's tired and wanted to rest early, and several people with slight disappointment bid her farewell.

After going out of the hotel, Waka clutching his chin said: “What a pity ah, such a beautiful woman unexpectedly found such an ordinary boyfriend. It seems like my opportunity is very big, look, just let me find an opportunity to be alone with Miss Hase, I will be able to capture her heart. As for her boyfriend, he can get the hell out. “

Murai didn't say anything, because he thought the same as Waka.

Akashiro Miho said: “I think it's not so easy, I can see that Miss Hase likes that man very much, it's not so simple to change her

embrace. “

Waka exposed a malicious smile, “That’s just because she didn’t know any better man before. Like a rookie’s debut, if you can get a senior’s guidance, the future is certainly limitless ah. When she realizes the benefits of knowing me, she will naturally change her mind. Didn’t you just came like that? How about without your Fukada senior? If not for his help, you’d be just an obscure second-rate writer. Come to my room tonight, perhaps you will find that I am much bigger than your Fukuda senior. “ He said while touching Akashiro Miho’s abundant buttocks.

“Thanks for senior’s care, but I’ve been recently accustomed to sleep alone. ” Akashiro Miho nonchalantly dodged aside.

Waka takes his hand back, “If you can’t sleep at night, you can to me anytime. “

Murai said to him: “Waka senior, we rarely come to Nagoya, isn’t shopping too boring, don’t you have any good place to introduce?”

Waka said: “I know a very special sushi restaurant, I will take you to see. “

Akashiro Miho was a little surprised, she never thought that this lecherous man would take them to a sushi restaurant, and not the red-light district.

After sitting for half an hour in a taxi, Waka took them to famous large living area in Nagoya, and not far away there is a red light district where nightclubs are concentrated.

But Waka did not take them to the red light district, but really came to the front of a conveyor belt sushi restaurant.

Looking from the outside, this restaurant and a regular conveyor belt sushi restaurant doesn’t have any difference, although it is much larger than the general sushi restaurant. After entering, Akashiro Miho found the restaurant business was surprisingly good. Only seeing the lounge filled with waiting guest, and some

guests came in and out.

At this time, a young waiter came up to them and said: “Would you like to eat sushi or would you like to order a meal?”

Waka said to him: “This young lady came to eat sushi, and us two came for a meal. “

“I got it, but now because there’s a lot of guests, whether it is to eat sushi or to order a meal, so please wait a moment. ” The waiter said, taking them to the lounge.

Hearing their conversation, Murai a bit strangely said: “Senior, eating sushi and a meal what’s the difference? Is there something else to eat here?

Waka with a mysterious smile said: “Of course there’s a difference, wait and you’ll know. “

At the lounge, Akashiro Miho was a little surprised to see a film on a plasma TV screen.

After the three of them sat down, the other men in the lounge began to look at Akashiro Miho’s plump chests with lust.

For such man’s vision, Akashiro Miho has been long accustomed to, she did not bother and readily flipped through the magazine.

About 20 minutes later, the waiter came to them and said: “Two gentlemen, it’s your turn for your meal. “

Waka stood up and said to the other two: “Finally it’s our turn, and now I’ll take you to see the most distinctive place in this sushi restaurant. “

Akashiro Miho and Murai a little bit behind followed him.

When they came to the innermost room, Akashiro Miho was amazed to see seven or eight young women in a see-through clothes wearing masks kneeling on a special conveyor belt with a spotlight on each woman’s head. In the spotlight, each figure can be clearly seen. In addition, in front of every woman there is a sign

which says, “eel sushi”, “salmon sashimi”, “crab sushi roll”, and other sushi names. As the conveyor belt rotates, those “sushi” are constantly rotating in front of them, as they normally do with sushi.

Seeing this, Murai came to understand the scriptures, he immediately and very excitedly look at those women.

At this time, that waiter also came over to ask: “Two guests, we have 50 minutes, 70 minutes with monthly 3 kinds of consumption, which type do you want?”

Waka said: “I’ll take 70 minutes, and I choose salmon sushi, Murai you?”

“I’ll also take 70 minutes, and eel sushi. “

After registering on the book, the waiter said: “The two please go to the second floor room to wait. Your sushi will be delivered soon. This miss, there is already vacancy outside, please come out with me. ”

Waka to Akashiro Miho said: “Little Miho, you eat slowly, this meal is on me. Besides the sushi here, the sushi outside is very tasty. We might be a little late, but if you can’t wait, you can go back first. “

“You play slowly. ” Akashiro Miho waved back and followed the waiter and went out.

Sure enough a dog can’t change its habit of eating shit. Sitting on a chair, Akashiro Miho whispered while eating sushi from the conveyor belt.

In order to vent, Akashiro Miho specifically picked those expensive sushi to eat, deliberately wanting to let that lecherous old man distressed.

More than 10 minutes later, suddenly from the door came in three vicious men with tattoos on their arms and bare chest.

As soon as the three men came in, a manager-like man came forward to greet with a smile and said: “Mr. Kawada, good evening. “

The man in front with a scar near his left ear coldly scoff.

“We have prepared this month’s expense, please follow me. ” Fearing the three men would frighten the other guests, the manager immediately greeted them to go upstairs.

Seeing the manager being so cooperative, the man nodded slightly with a satisfaction, and after looking at the guests waiting at the lounge said: “Your business here is getting better and better. “

The manager thought he wanted to increase the protection fees, cannot help but be surprised immediately accompanied with a laugh and said: “This is Mr. Kawa’s care, recently the store came with two new dishes, does Mr. Kawada have an interest to try it?”

Kawada indeed showed an interested look, “Is it? Then call them over, and my two brothers will properly take care of them. “

“Certainly, certainly, asking Mr. Kawada and the two gentlemen to wait in the VIP room, I’ll call them over soon. “

” Don’t let us wait too long, we’re very busy. “

“I know. ” The manager laughed and sent them upstairs.

After they went upstairs, Akashiro Miho then recovered her vision.

It’s really a gang collecting protection fees, it’s completely different from seeing it on TV or movie. It was the first time she had seen such a scene, until now her heart is still beating hard.

The world that those people lived in is completely different from the world she’s familiar with, she didn’t even dare to look up and stare at them, fearing that those people would take fancy to herself.

She began to hesitate whether to stay and eat, or to leave at once, but is not careful enough the chopsticks hit the ground.

When she bent down to pick up the chopsticks, suddenly a man wearing shoes stepped down, and almost got scared of her hand being stepped upon.

Akashiro Miho a little offended, she immediately sat straight up to see that guy with no eyes.

“Hey, did you not see I’m picking up something?” Akashiro Miho shouted at the man in a black windbreaker.

But the man did not look at her, and continued to walk forward.

Akashiro Miho was furious, but actually could not seize him. She can only stare at his back with angry eyes.

Then a waiter walked up to that man and said: “Sir, would you like to eat sushi or order a meal?”

The man did not care for him and just went straight upstairs.

The waiter immediately stopped him and explained: “Sir, can you please wait in the lounge? Upstairs is a place for other guests to entertain, please...”

But before he could finished speaking, the man suddenly stretched out his left hand clutching his hair, then the waiter could not react in time when his whole person was thrown out.

“Bang” The waiter hit the edge of the table, and the powerful impact knocked the cups, vases, and other things above it. Immediately after, the waiter sends out a pitiful yell, looking at the part where his hair had been caught, more than half of his hair was abruptly ripped off exposing the scalp that is constantly bleeding.

No one expected for such a thing, all the guests and waiters in the store were frightened and stared at the man in windbreaker went up the stairs.

Watching at the waiter screaming, Akashiro Miho’s heart felt

very afraid, she dared not imagine if she just continue to scold down and provoked that man's anger, she did not know what he will do to herself.

At this time the other guests felt that something might happen, and came out from the lounge to watch the fun, but no one dared to go upstairs to see.

“Now what? You want to call the police?” A waiter asked another colleague after glancing at the bleeding colleague.

“Don't call the police, otherwise the manager will kill us. Right, immediately inform the manager. ” The waiter said.

“But the manager is upstairs, how about you go inform him. “

“Why should I go, can't you go?”

“I don't want to die, right, do you know the manager's phone number?”

“I remember there's the registration on the counter. ” The waiter immediately went to the counter.

When they were very nervously flipping through the book looking for the manager's phone number, from upstairs suddenly came a hair-raising scream.

“What happened?” A man couldn't help but asked.

But as soon as he had finished, from upstairs came more hair-raising screams, and then followed by a sound of heavy impact hitting something.

“I, I think we should call the police. ” The waiter who first proposed to report showed a look of horror in his eyes.

Another waiter can't help but hesitate, though not knowing what happened upstairs, but at least it was certain that someone have been injured, or...

Thinking to here, he also began to fear. As he was about to speak, he heard a lot of noise upstairs, and then a couple of men and

women wrapped up in sheets or nothing at all ran down the stairs. They ran and shouted: “Killed, someone has been killed...”

Hearing the cries of those people, everyone can't help change their complexion.

Just then, Akashiro Miho saw a black shadow like a ghost suddenly appeared behind those men and women who ran down from the stairs.

The shadow appeared to be incredibly fast, as if it had been standing there, if it didn't look like a human figure, Akashiro Miho even thought she saw an illusion.

But what happened next was something she never dreamed of.

When the black figure appeared behind those people, under the dim light of ambiguous atmosphere, Akashiro Miho seemed to see something flashing, and then she saw running in last middle-aged man naked body as if something has streak across, then, she saw the man from the right shoulder blade, until the left flank, even the head with the left chest portion of the entire upper body fell down.

“Pop”, the man with it's upper body cut aslant fell on the ground, followed by a spring like water from the two wounds constantly madly spurting out red blood.

Although not a lot of people saw the scene in the midst of chaos, the faces of those had instantly became as white as a corpse, including Akashiro Miho who saw the same scene. At the same time, she finally saw that the shadow is the man in black windbreaker, and he was holding a dark brown katana. She knew now that the man's body was cut by anything.

Like the prologue of a stage play, after the dark figure cut that man in half, with a backhanded blade cut another man's head off. Then he rushed forward, and anyone who meets the man was chopped off.

Bright red blood, gruesome screams, broken limbs, was everywhere. The film or TV which shows fights in a Japanese period drama was totally different, where no matter who the man cuts, will be absolutely dismembered. Someone was cut from the chest horizontally into two halves, there are also those like that middle-aged man who was cut aslant in two. That kind of strength, that kind of sharpness, it is impossible to imagine that is a blade.

At this time, everyone was scared out of their minds, desperately running towards outside. But because the door is not very big, many people were jammed up and unable to go out, except for a lucky few who break out from the others, the others made an effort to squeeze forward but it actually made it harder to get out. Cries, curses, howls, screams constantly ringing, and with louder screams from behind. The sound of hysteria that humans utter when they are terrified made the scene more terrifying.

Finally, the people in the back were killed, as if the man like a Grim Reaper did not stop his footsteps. Step by step towards the crowd of people in the doorway.

Slaughter, a true slaughter.

The man is like a monster that came out from the depths of hell, frantically killing all the moving objects in sight. Every brandished of the blade, someone will be cut off alive.

The bright red blood of the entire shop dyed a bright red, scalp tingling screams from the beginning till now has not stopped, here is just like a human slaughterhouse.

When the man in windbreaker was frantically killing, Akashiro Miho was gently opening a glass window with trembling hands.

She was just like everyone else, in the loss of reason she rushed to the door and tried to squeeze out, but she was pushed aside by a man with great strength. But because of this congestion, she had the chance to see the man who brandished the blade crazily in a close proximity.

Even if it is a dream, the horror scene could not have been imagined and made her legs felt weak, the body can't bring out an ounce of strength, but the strong survival instinct forced her to crawl to the nearest window.

When she opened the window, she immediately held the window with her limp hands and tried to crawl out.

Even if the window frame had scratched her knees and arms, she felt nothing, and now she was just trying to escape from the horrible place and flee from the horrible man.

Finally, after a round of struggle, she managed to climb out of the window, just when she was on the ground, she fell. But now she has lost all her pain and with almost no pause, she crawled with every effort like a baby learning to walk.

From behind still constantly came screams that stimulated her nerves like countless needles. She aimlessly crawled forward, anywhere is good, as long as she can stay away from the demon.

Suddenly, she heard a sharp braking noise, when she turned her head she saw a car coming at her. The last thing she saw was a black wheel growing in front of her eyes...

※※※※※※※※※※

“Excuse me, how's the situation of Miss Akashiro now?” Outside the ward, the president of the Young Writers Association, asked the attending physician who had just finished the examination.

The doctor replied: “Apart from some scratches she has no major trauma, but because she was terrified, she's temporarily in a coma.”

“It's all good. ” The president was slightly relieved. He had no idea that this would happen at the youth writer's exchange. There are already two people who died, and he really didn't want to hear an unfortunate news to the third writer.

At this time, a person who was supposed to entertain guests at

the venue came over, followed by two police officers behind him.

“Association President, these two officers are looking for Miss Akashiro. ” Said the person in charge.

“Excuse me, is Miss Akashiro awake now?” A middle aged police officer asked the president.

The president replied: “Miss Akashiro is still not awake because she was terrified. “

The two police officers showed a slightly disappointed expression, “Well, that’s out of the question. If Miss Akashiro wakes up, can we trouble you to inform us?

“OK. “

“Thank you. ” The two police left the hospital.

“President, what did they came looking Akashiro for?”

“They should be looking for Miss Akashiro to make a statement, after all, she was one of the few people who survived. “

As he spoke, he saw a moving beauty coming his way, in her side followed an ordinary looking man, “Turns out to be Miss Hasegawa, hello. You came to see Miss Akashiro?”

“Excuse me, how is Miss Akashiro now?” Naoko asked the president.

The president told her about Akashiro Miho’s situation, then said he have some things to deal with and have to leave first.

After saying goodbye to him, Naoko and Lei Yin walked into the ward.

The ward was very quiet, and a woman was lying motionless in a white bed.

After bringing the flowers into the vase on the table, Naoko looked at the pale Akashiro Miho.

“Such matter actually happened. ” Naoko sighed softly.

She didn't think that the three people who had spoken to her last night, in just one night, two of them died and the remaining one is lying in the hospital. Things are impermanence, it's really saddening.

Suddenly, a hand held her waist.

Feeling the warm touch behind, Naoko's heart slowly settled down, and leaned her head lightly on his shoulder.

At this time in the streets of Nagoya, there are police cars and patrol officers patrol in rotation.

The man who is secretly called "the butcher" inside the police department, has suddenly appeared in an underground casino in the eastern district shortly after killing dozens of people at a sushi restaurant.

Just like before, the man was carrying a Japanese katana to slaughter inside the casino.

Because the underground casino has just recently opened, and the location is very secluded and hard to find, when the police received the report and rush to go over, they only saw gruesome corpses everywhere.

The floor was sprinkled with blood, and the body which was cut open exposed the human body tissue. So, for those police who had just serve for a few years almost couldn't bear and vomit at the scene. The number of people in the casino was much larger than at the sushi restaurant. So this time, the victims are much more than the sushi restaurant.

In less than an hour, there are occurrence of two serious homicides, the entire Nagoya and the surrounding areas fell into a state of unprecedented tension. Each police department immediately organized police officers to drive and patrol around the road to find the murderer as soon as possible. If not for fear of causing public panic, the mayor of Nagoya even wanted to impose

a curfew.

Along with the police, there are also various newspapers, television reporters. In addition to a few of them closely following the whereabouts of police cars, most people wanted to break through the police siege net to enter the sushi restaurant and the casino to shoot.

Finally, the uproar of the night passed. By the next morning, police officers patrolling the streets did not find any whereabouts of that man.

Many people who had just learned about it from the news or newspapers had begun to panic, they cannot believe that such horrific killings will occur in modern cities.

Very quickly, the night came again.

At this time, most people were afraid to go out, shops and night clubs also closed their doors early. Usually a lively streets and living quarters, now became depressed and deserted. Police officers patrolling the districts are also very nervous, since no one knows what will happen tonight.

※ ※ ※ ※ ※ ※ ※ ※ ※ ※ ※

“Big brother Yoshida, big brother Yoshida. “

Hearing the call outside, lying on a woman’s fiercely twitching body the man stopped his action, and shouted: “Go and take a hike for me!”

“Big, big brother Yoshida. Mr. Agata is here, he said he had something urgent to find you. “

What’s that guy doing here? Yoshida frowned, finally unwillingly climb up.

The woman lying under him looked blankly at the man whose whole body is tattooed walked to the side and dressed.

Walking to the living room, Yoshida saw in a kimono, and a

somewhat gray haired Agata Kotarou, sitting on a chair without glancing sideways, behind him stood still three tall men in a suit.

Yoshida's eyes could not help but flashed a trace of anger. This troublesome old foggy, if not because he just took over the Ji Group, and some things needed this guy to help, he would have already killed the old foggy who's taking advantage of his seniority.

Although in his heart there's a lot of dissatisfaction, but Yoshida still put on a very respectful face to go, "Uncle Agata good evening, I don't know what matter that made you find me so late?"

"Sugiyama, I just received a tip-off, the Hayama Group seems to be ready to take action. I suspect they want to take the opportunity to seize our territory on the eastern district. " Agata Kotarou briefly said.

Yoshida's eyes revealed a suspicious look, "Impossible, now the streets are full of police, how dare they do so. "

"Sugiyama, you think too simply. Now the police are thinking about catching the homicidal maniac, as long as they're not making too much noise, they won't even bother about the gang's turf wars. And don't forget, since that homicidal maniac suddenly appeared in our area, more than 10 of our people were killed in the underground casino, so now many people of Ji Group are afraid that the guy will show up again, and dare not to go out casually. Such a good opportunity, that wolf Hayama Rong will not absolutely let off easily. So, I want you to take someone to the east district right away. "

Seeing the old man criticizing him again in front of his subordinates, Yoshida's heart is burning with anger immediately.

With gloomy face he said: "Uncle Aga, it's very late now, if there's any thing, say it tomorrow again. "

Agata Kotarou a little angry said: "Sugiyama, do you know what you're saying is insane, you really don't cherish me and your

father working hard to lay down the foundation. If the eastern district will really be seized by Hayama Group, our Ji Group's power in Nagoya will shrink a lot. You..."

Before he finished, Yoshida suddenly stood up and went inside.

"Sugiyama, what's the meaning of this?" Seeing his attitude, Agata Kotarou could not help but get angry.

"Kotarou, didn't you hear what I just said? I told you, if there's any thing say it tomorrow." Yoshida Sugiyama left the living room without turning his head.

Agata Kotarou was trembling with rage and finally left angrily.

Until sitting down in his own car, Agata Kotarou's anger had yet to subside.

He cursed: "This little beast, if I had not helped his father lay down this vast inheritance, he would have died not knowing where. Now he actually dared did this to me. "

At this time, a gentle young man whispered next to him: "Uncle, I have said that Sugiyama is the kind of ungrateful person, you see after taking over Ji Group, he immediately replaced Yin Fukuike and Satarou. This is clearly to weaken your power in Ji Group. When he gets the hang of Ji Group, we don't know how he's going to deal with us. So uncle, we don't need to be polite to such a person. "

Agata Kotarou calmed down and said: "Your meaning?"

The young man whispered a few words to his ear.

After listening to his words, Agata Kotarou's face became very serious, "Kawasaki, I don't want to do it not until the last minute, after all, his father when alive has given me grace. "

"Uncle, although Uncle Ryouyama had given you grace, but you had risks one's life these many years for him, this can be considered as you repaying him. Moreover, at present his son

wants to go against you, if you're not going ahead, we'll be in danger when the chance is no longer. “

Agata Kotarou remained silent, and after a while said: “I'll think about it. “

Kawasaki no longer made any remarks. The inside of the compartment suddenly became very quiet.

Suddenly, the car sharply brakes, and the two men sitting in the back suddenly hit the back of the leather chair in front.

“What happened?” Kawasaki sat up and loudly questioned the bodyguard who was driving.

“So, sorry, a person suddenly came out in front. ” The bodyguard nervously explained.

Kawasaki looked past the window and indeed saw a man five or six meters away blocking in front. Because the surrounding light is insufficient, he can only see that it's a man.

“You go and see what's going on?” Kawasaki said to the two bodyguards in front.

The two bodyguards each opened their side of the door and walked off the car while placing their right hand in the chest, ready to pull off the gun.

At this time, Kawasaki suddenly saw his uncle pull out a pistol from his body, and could not help but be a little surprised. Over the years, he had seldom seen his uncle so nervous.

“Uncle, what's wrong?” Kawasaki asked.

“Be careful, I think that man is weird. ” Kawasaki's face became serious.

By his influence, Kawasaki could not help but tense up, followed by pulling out a pistol from his body.

When approaching that man, a bodyguard coldly shouted, “Don't get in the way, and quickly fuck off. “

In the darkness, the other bodyguard seemed to see the man laughing, he felt something was wrong, and was about to pull out the gun when suddenly, in front of his eyes appeared an indescribable black light, and that was the last image he saw in this world. He was a bit luckier because his peer died without seeing anything.

In contrast to the two people who died without knowing, in the eyes of Agata Kotarou and Kawasaki, it was completely another gruesome picture.

Under the illumination of the headlight, they clearly saw, the two bodyguard's head in a flash from the position of the nose bridge, horizontally broke into two halves, and then the separated half of the head silently fell on the ground.

They could not exactly saw what the man did, they only saw when the two bodyguards fell, he had a very long black katana in his hand. At the same time, under the white light, they saw the man's face, and the smile in his mouth made the heart very cold.

※※※※※※※※※※※※

After twitching for a while, seeing the woman still endured silently like a dead person, Yoshida Sugiyama burning with anger, slap the woman's face.

Blood slowly flowed from the woman's mouth, but she did not have any fear or excited expression, as if that slap was not hit on her.

Yoshida Sugiyama stared fiercely, "Don't forget that your husband, who is half dead, is still lying in the hospital. As long as I want, I can always get someone to kill him. How about letting your daughter take your place, I really want to try a little girl of that age. "

The woman's face suddenly changed, she slowly knelt down in front of him, "Please do not hurt them, I will serve you well. "

Yoshida Sugiyama's eyes revealed a proud expression, extending his foot in front of her, "Help me lick it clean. "

The woman without hesitation, held his foot with both hands to lick.

Yoshida Sugiyama laughed loudly.

Late at night, Yoshida Sugiyama suddenly woke up, he felt something was pressing on his body, and thought it was the woman, but slowly, he felt from the sheets transmits a strange wet.

He reached out and touched the sheet, sure enough, he really felt it's very wet. He used his fingers to dip a little and put it in front of his nose to sniffed it, but he smelled a familiar smell, and almost in an instant, he knew it was blood. With panic, he immediately stood up.

Just then, he sensed that there seemed to be more than one person in the room.

Without much thought, he ran to the back window at once.

But suddenly, he stopped, with no longer any movement.

Yoshida Sugiyama tremblingly said: "Don't kill me, I can give you anything you want. " He felt his neck had been cut by the crossed blade in front, and a trace of blood was trickling down from the wound.

At this time, the man standing behind him suddenly became short of breath, like a bloodthirsty beast, and after a while, Yoshida Sugiyama heard the man's pent-up voice.

"Yoshida Sugiyama, do you remember me?" It was a very hoarse voice.

"Who, who are you?" Yoshida Sugiyama almost wanted to look back at that man.

"You really have forgotten me, but it doesn't matter, I will make

you remember me. Do you know? I've been waiting for this day for a long time. “

“Who exactly are you? Are you Agata Kotarou's person?”

“That old man is already dead, just lying beside you is him. Don't you always want to kill him? Now that I've helped you out, should you not repay me?” Suddenly, the man with his left hand clasped him by the throat, then thrust the blade that lays across his neck into Yoshida Sugiyama's thigh.

“Zi”, not only the blade passes through Yoshida Sugiyama's thigh, the man also slowly move the blade to continue.

Yoshida Sugiyama screamed out, but in the time the call was rushing to his throat, it was forced back by the tightening of that left hand, and can only issued a dull sound.

At this time, the man's breathing became more rapid, and he said to Yoshida Sugiyama: “Remember Meiko? The woman that you tortured to death?”

Hearing that name, the pupil of Yoshida Sugiyama suddenly shrank, “You, you are her husband?”

“It seems that you finally came to think of it, I won't let you die so easily, I want you to taste that while you live you want to might as well die. ” The man grinned and slowly cut up the blade.

The great pain caused Yoshida Sugiyama to struggle, but the man's hand, like an iron clamp, made him unable to move.

In Yoshida Sugiyama's bed, a body covered with sheets was constantly trembling.

Chapter 225 – Heart To Heart Talk

“Little Sei, you’ve changed a lot. ” A female student carefully looked at her.

“Am I?” Take Asasei said a little confused.

“Yes, it feels like you’re getting more beautiful. “

“Even if you don’t say such, I won’t be treating you to a meal. “

The two girls laugh covering their mouth.

A boy sitting over said: “Little Sei, I really envy you ah, you can enter Teikyo to study, the University where I’m studying have almost fights everyday. It’s like hell. “

Take Asasei a bit embarrassed said, “In fact, it’s about the same, right, I heard that Little Mi has gotten married is it?”

The girl replied: “Yes, she married to Kanagawa, I heard she meet her husband in a blind date. “

“Her grades in high school are very good, I thought she would continue to study, but I didn’t expect her to get married so early. ” Take Asasei said.

“When we heard the news of her marriage, we were also very surprised. “

This time, another girl interrupted and asked: “Little Sei, do you have a boyfriend in college?”

“Not yet. “

“Teikyo guys really have no eyes. Well, how about being my girlfriend?” A boy said with a smile.

“Takeshita, you still hasn’t changed with that same rigidity as before. Little Sei, you should not be deceived by him, he has a girlfriend in university. “

Take Asasei chuckled at the side. Really nice, it feels like I’m back

in high school.

A girl with a little regret said: “A pity that some students went to other countries to study or work, so they cannot come, otherwise, this time’s high school reunion will definitely be lively. “

“Those guys on graduation said in any case they will come to attend the reunion, but the result isn’t it not the same as a freed pigeons. Those bunch of guys are really untrustworthy. ” A girl said angrily.

“Maybe they really have something to do. ” Take Asasei picked up the juice on the table and drank it slowly.

Around 11 o’clock in the evening, some students suggested that since tomorrow is Sunday anyway, it’s better to go to Shinjuku to visit the night market. This proposal was immediately warmly received by most people.

After coming out of the theater box of the bar, a line of dozen or so people walked outside while talking.

When Take Asasei went to the bar counter, she suddenly saw a very familiar figure lying on the counter drinking.

With a careful look. Sure enough, it’s really him, and he looked like he was drunk.

“Little Sei, what’s wrong?” Seeing her standing still, a girl asked.

“Oh, nothing. ” Take Asasei recovered, after glancing at that person’s eyes, she continued to walked out with the other students.

Out of the bar, several boys began to separate to find a taxi. The other girls are standing there chatting, waiting for the car.

Take Asasei who had been silent after coming out of the bar, in her heart hesitated.

After a while, that several boys called several taxis over, and the others began to get on the car in groups.

When it's Take Asasei's turn to board the car, she suddenly looked back at the bar, turning her head back, she said to the students inside the car: "Sorry, I just saw a friend inside who's drunk, I won't be going, I will have a look at him. "

"Well, okay, be careful. " A girl said a little disappointed.

After she parted with them, Take Asasei returned to the bar.

Feeling that someone took his glass, Takeda angrily cursed, "Which bastard dared to rob my wine?"

Was cursed, Take Asasei can't help but toot up the mouth angrily. She now began to regret to deliberately stayed behind for this fellow. But she still urged: "Hey, stop drinking, you are already drunk. "

"Idiot, I'm certainly not drunk. Originally, it's you, how can you be here?" Seeing clearly sitting beside him unexpectedly is that someone who often quarreled with him, Take Asasei, the already a bit tipsy Takeda could not help but be a bit stunned.

"I came here to participate a high school reunion, did not expect to see you here drinking. I originally did not want to care about you, but who told you to be a friend of Kazumi's brother. So, I stayed behind to see how you are. You too, lying on the table without doing anything. I thought you were too drunk and was unconscious. " Take Asasei complained.

Takeda a bit smugly laughed, "Who asked you to be such a 38?"

"You..." Take Asasei gnashed her teeth in anger. In order to see how is this guy doing, she specially stayed, but resulted in exchange for such words.

"Since there's nothing, I'm leaving. " Take Asasei stood up and ready to go.

"Hey, since you're here, stay with me for a drink?" Takeda thought it's boring for only one person to drink, so he wants to drink with her together.

“I have no time to accompany you, drink on your own. “

Takeda smiled helplessly, “Is it? Then forget it. ” He turned his body back, and picked up the glass to continue drinking.

Seeing him like this, Take Asasei felt as if he had something in mind.

“Please give me a glass of juice with ice. ” Take Asasei suddenly sat down and asked the bartender for a drink.

Takeda looked at her puzzledly.

Take Asasei casually said: “I did not stay because of you, just thirsty to drink something. ”

Takeda smiled.

Take Asasei suddenly felt he smiled a bit like a child.

“Hey, why are you drinking alone here?” After a sip of juice, Take Asasei asked.

“Originally I division with Yoshikawa together, but the guy had something came up halfway and slip away. Needless to say, it must be for a woman. Really to value sex over friendship bastard. ” Takeda cursed while fiercely drink a few mouthfuls

“Don’t drink anymore, or you’ll really get drunk. At that time, I may not able to carry you. “

“Well, I can drink so well that even Yoshikawa is not my match. ” Takeda said without care.

Take Asasei looked at him silently for a while, “Hey, what’s the matter with you?”

Takeda laughed, “What matter can I have?”

“I always felt you are weird today. “

Takeda did not say anything, and continued to drink.

Not knowing how long, he suddenly turned to Take Asasei and said: “You tell me, do all girls love Ogata Yasuda that kind of

man?”

Take Asasei did not expect he would ask this question, and for a moment did not know how to answer.

Takeda seeing her like this, said to himself: “It seems that there’s some truth to what Yoshikawa said. “

“Hey, what the hell is wrong with you today?”

Looking at her one eye, Takeda said: “Actually these two days I have deliberately stayed outside of your part-time bookstore, there, I saw Ogata Yasuda waiting every day for Kazumi. Today, I also saw that guy unexpectedly took the initiative to help Kazumi put new books. Yoshikawa said that with that guy’s condition, if he’s really serious, there’s basically no girl that can be indifferent. “

Take Asasei sighed gently at heart, and then said: “I always thought you like Kazumi, but why didn’t you express anything?”

Takeda wryly smiled, “You don’t understand, in front of Kazumi, I feel like an idiot. If Masashi is not there, I don’t know what to say to her at all. She’s completely different from the girls I’ve met before, and if I’m not a friend of her brother, she probably won’t talk to me. In fact, sometimes I really envy Ogata Yasuda, at least he dared to chase her uprightly, A pity that every time I see that guy around her, I can’t wait to rush to flatten him. “

After listening to him, Take Asasei leaned on the table and whispered: “Kazumi is very special. “

Takeda asked the bartender for two beers, and then put one of the cups in front of her, “It seems like you’re not so simple with that playboy. “

“You want to pry about what?” Take Asasei glared at him.

Takeda: said: “Nothing, just a little curious. Actually liking that playboy is not a big deal. “

Looking at him for a while, Take Asasei faintly said: “You guessed right, I like Yasuda. But I know it was to no avail, because he never liked me. “

Take Asasei slowly said that Yasuda once pretended to pursue her to coerce Kazumi.

While talking, she subconsciously wanted to drink, but found that the juice had already been drunk, thus picked up the beer in front of her to drink up.

Takeda first time heard this matter, the more he listened the more he's angry, and finally cursed Ogata Yasuda for being a despicable villain.

Seeing his excited appearance, Take Asasei suddenly felt very funny, finally couldn't help laughing.

“Strange, just like this it went through, but no one answered. I don't know what that guy is doing right now. ” Yoshikawa said while hanging up the phone.

Akira Shiraishi looked at him with odd eyes, “In the newspaper said that in Tokyo there are some ren yao in the bar that sets about to drunk young men, if that guy was really robbed of his color, you have to take the main responsibility. “

Yoshikawa said indifferently: “If he really is so lucky, I can only congratulate him, after all, this rare experience is not the average person can easily encounter. “

At the same time, the ridiculed rebellious youth is facing the most awkward situation in his life.

When he was woken by a cell phone ringing, he felt a splitting headache, and Takeda who once had this experience, knew it's the side effects of hangover.

Under a dizzy head, he didn't want to get up immediately, so he continued to close his eyes and lay on the bed.

Suddenly, he felt his right hand touch a semicircular, soft and creamy strange object. In a semi sober situation, he used his right hand to continue to feel that thing that felt quite good.

After a while, his mind gradually sobered up, and then, a trace of cold sweat ran down his forehead. He quietly retracted his right hand back and dare not go any further.

Chapter 226 – Cold

Like a thief, he sat up slowly and slowly turned his head to the side and looked over.

Only to see a naked, sleeping girl lying next beside him, and that person is Take Asasei.

Takeda's heart felt a very absurd feeling

His mother, what the fuck happened? Takeda endured the headache of hangover and tried to remember what happened yesterday.

He only remembered meeting her in the bar and drinking with her, and they seemed to talk a lot, but can't remember what happened at the end.

Takeda wryly smiled, unexpectedly his first time like this he can't remember clearly.

In addition to Yoshikawa who he played with since childhood, nobody believed that Takeda was a virgin until last night.

Kyoto is different from Tokyo, where it's a historic old city, so the whole social atmosphere of the night is far less open than in Tokyo. Although Takeda gave people a feeling of a bad rebellious youth, but the conservative family education and his father specifically set the access rules so that he in junior high and senior high have no time to fool around. And he's not the type of man who is easily favored by women, but he never dream that his first partner would be her.

Forget it, the milk is already spoilt. Anyway, men in this regard can't be considered disadvantageous. After thinking, Takeda unconsciously carefully looked at the girl asleep.

To his surprise, her figure was much better than he had imagined, and he had thought she was the runway-airport-type of girl.

Her waist is very thin, although not a big-breasted type of figure, but the measurement curves proportion is very symmetrically natural. Compared to those who deliberately tanned their skin into a fashionable girl, her skin looks very white and delicate. Like the kind of delicate aesthetic sense that made one palpitate with excitement.

Recalling the wonderful touch of his right hand, and then looking at her half exposed perfectly round and firm chest, Takeda felt his throat burst off heat.

As he continued to move down his line of sight, he suddenly saw a small piece of red blood on the white sheet that had dried up.

At that moment, Takeda had the urge to escape from here immediately.

Don't be nervous, maybe it's not what you think, it might be just because her time came . Takeda consoled himself, and then he quietly stood up and put on his pants.

Just when he had picked up his pants from the ground ready to put it on, suddenly, a burst of musical ringtone rang out from his cellphone on the bedside.

Takeda had a scare, and could only stand there dull with his pants, and didn't know what to do.

Obviously Takeda and Take Asasei's music taste is somewhat different, that Takeda's quite like the dynamic music ringtone made Take Asasei feel very harsh.

Reaching out a hand to find that phone by it's noise, Take Asasei slightly opened her eyes, only to see the caller's name is Yoshikawa.

Strange, what did he call me for? Take Asasei vaguely thought.

At this time, the phone ringtone just stopped. Take Asasei did not dial back, but chose to close her eyes to continue to sleep. The hangover headache also tortured her nerves, so she couldn't think

properly.

Suddenly, she felt her body seeming not to wear clothes. This makes a woman who had no habit of being naked feel quite restless, making her heart surprised as she immediately opened her eyes again.

When she wanted to sit up, she suddenly felt a sting in her lower body.

This strange tingling sensation made her whole person sober, she looked down at her lower body, suddenly making her face in upheaval. In this moment, she knew what happened to her, and a gust of strong sadness swept her nerves like the tide. Unlike other female students who regard virginity as a shame, she is just a normal but conservative girl. She always thought that the most important first time must be left to boy she like most. She even thought, if Yasuda wanted to, she would not hesitate to give it to him, but she did not think that she has been stubbornly restrained and the most precious thing was lost.

At the same time, an equally strong rage welled up from her, she must find that hateful creature.

When she lifted her eyes full of tears, suddenly, she saw a man standing in the corner of the room, wearing his pants stealthily.

“Who are you?!” Take Asasei forcibly wiped her tears, and suddenly looked at the man with a look that can almost kill people.

“Good, Good morning...” Takeda greeted her with a forced smile.

A cleaner walking through the corridor suddenly heard from the front room came a few heavy impact noises and some things falling onto the ground, which was mixed with several pitiful cries of a man.

She was surprised and thought that there had been a homicide and quickly went downstairs to get someone up.

Today is the day that Akashiro Miho is discharged.

Although she had a few scratches on her hands and feet, after two days in hospital, her body has basically recovered, but because of a considerable shock, she needed to stay in the hospital for counselling, not until one week later she was discharged.

The ones who came to pick her up are only the Association President of Young Writers, Lei Yin and Naoko these three people.

With the death of the two writers under the blade of the serial killer, the Japanese Writer's Association has put an end to the Young Writer's Exchange. Within two days, the young writers of each country one after another left. More than half of the 10 or so young writers from Tokyo had gone back, and only six or seven more daring writers thought that Gero City Hotel from Nagoya are some distance, so they stayed and continued their vacation.

After the association president handled the discharge formalities, four people slowly went out of the hospital.

Out of the hospital door, Akashiro Miho relaxed and breathed, "Finally came out, I really had enough of the inside full of disinfectant taste and that ugly patient clothing. "

Naoko smiled and said: "You missed one of them, don't forget there is also the hospital food. "

Akashiro Miho nodded heavily, "You are right, those food are really unpalatable. After going back, I must eat delicious food enough. President, you just wait in silence for your wallet. "

"Miho, you just got discharge, it's better for you to eat some light things. "

"President you're too stingy, anyway, the cost of each exchange is from various publishing houses. What are you so nervous about?"

"Where am I nervous? I just care about you. "

As they were talking, the front suddenly came a burst of rapid siren, not long after, a few police cars from the street roared past.

“So many police cars, I wonder what happened?” The president watched the police cars disappear.

Lei Yin said to Naoko: “I’ll call a taxi, you wait here. “

“OK. “

As soon as she finished, she suddenly found that Lei Yin was looking at the direction of the corner with strange eyes.

“Masashi, what’s wrong?” Naoko looked over there and saw nothing.

“Nothing, maybe I’m seeing wrong. ” Lei Yin slowly withdrew his vision and then walked to the roadside to intercept a taxi.

In the evening, in the hotel dining room, a young writer said with a little concern: “Gero is so close to Nagoya. Are you not afraid to stay here? I heard that the ‘midnight butcher’ has killed hundreds of people in Nagoya. “

His companion, a 30-something year old man wearing glasses, with indifference drank and said, “Afraid of what? I heard people saying that the murderer has been caught by the police. It’s rare to have to come to Gero Onsen, of course we have enjoyed it thoroughly. “

“Is this news true?” Another writer interposed and asked.

“Of course it’s true, when have I deceived you? The most funny thing is that Eguchi and Takemura those cowards, as soon as they’ve got the wind of it they ran faster than the rabbit. Really making our Tokyo local writer lose face. ” The man who is already tipsy is getting more and more excited.

Those men spoke in a loud voice, and Akashiro Miho, who had just been discharged from the hospital hearing that homicidal maniac, her brain unconsciously emerged from the scene at that time, making her face suddenly become very ugly, and her body slightly trembling.

Naoko who sat with her, saw her reaction and turned her eyes to Lei Yin.

Lei Yin smiled and nodded.

Naoko saw him agreed, so to Akashiro Miho she said softly: “Miss Akashiro, I’ll go back to the room to eat with you. It’s quiet there. “

Akashiro Miho looked at her gratefully, “Thank you, Miss Hase. “

“You are too polite. ” Naoko saw her agree, so she called the hotel service lady to bring their food into the room.

Seeing three of them left, Asou Kiku whispered a curse “shedding crocodile tears“.

The president of Young Writer’s Association who sat with her pretended not to hear, and continued to eat.

Asou Kiku glanced at him and said, “Association president, are you ready to return to Tokyo tomorrow?”

The president replied: “Yes, since Miss Akashiro has been discharged, I can also go back at ease. “

Asou Kiku said: “After you go back, I’ll trouble you to tell the editor-in-chief Satou of the publishing house, that recently I am looking for an inspiration for writing, and I can’t hand it to him for a while. Please tell him to wait for a while. “

The president asked a little strangely: “Aren’t you going back, Miss Asou? But the former president will be worried about you. “

Asou Kiku’s face sank, “Do not mention that person in front of me. “

It seems that the rumor that they’re going to divorce is true, the president looked at her face while thinking.

A bunch of annoying idiots! After returning to the room, Asou Kiku who was in an extremely irritable mood, threw the pillow on the door.

After lying in bed for a while, she wanted to take a hot bath and relax, so she went to the front of the closet and opened the wardrobe to take pajamas.

As soon as she opened the wardrobe, suddenly she saw something flying out from it, she was startled to screamed.

But her scream stopped in an instant, and Asou Kiku only felt a cold thing running through her throat. Because it happened too suddenly, she could not even feel any pain, and only felt her throat is very cold, cold like ice...

Chapter 227 – Dominate

Hearing the noise from outside the room, Naoko and Akashiro Miho felt very strange. But Lei Yin's face became very serious, for he smelled the faint smell of blood wafting through the air.

“You sit here and don't go out, I'll see what's going on out there.” Lei Yin stood up and walked to the door of the room.

“Lei, you have to be careful.” Naoko felt a little unusual and could not help but worry.

Lei Yin nodded, and soon went out.

When he left, Naoko waited a bit nervously. Unfortunately, the window is on the other side of the room, so she cannot see the yard inside. Without going out, she was completely unable to know what happened outside. But she felt her heart beating faster and faster as if something bad had happened.

Outside the noise is getting more and more loud, Akashiro Miho finally cannot sit still, and said to Naoko: “Miss Hase, let's go outside to have a look.”

Naoko shook her head, “I'll wait here for him to come back.”

Looking at her really didn't want to go, Akashiro Miho had to ran out of the room alone.

Looking alone at the deserted room, Naoko's heart became more and more restless.

Suddenly, the door was opened very forcibly. Naoko was startled, but after clearly seeing the person, she finally put down her heart.

“Lei, outside...”

But before she could ask, Lei Yin suddenly came and picked her up, and then walked up to the front of the window and said: “Don't be afraid, hold my neck and don't let go.”

Naoko hugged his neck according to his words, and suddenly she

saw Lei Yin jumped out the window.

This is the third floor! Naoko had a scare, but when she reacted, Lei Yin's feet landed his feet with ease.

"Isn't it exciting?" Lei Yin bowed his head and smiled and kiss at her shocked face, then carried her towards the forest at side of the hotel.

After a while, Naoko slowly recovered, she asked softly: "Lei, just what happened?"

Lei Yin while running said: "A madman came in from outside the hotel taking a blade and cutting people around. "

"There's actually something like that? Is anyone injured?" Naoko exclaimed.

"Rest assured, no one was injured. Most of the people in the hotel have already fled, waiting for the police to catch him soon. "

Naoko then felt slightly relieved.

She did not know, that in fact, Lei Yin's words had other meanings.

It is true that no one was hurt, but only because the people were dismembered to death, so the rate of injured was zero. And Lei Yin recognized that the man was holding that evil blade. Although the news or newspaper just said that a man is holding a Japanese katana to kill, but did have no pictures of the murderer and the real weapon. However, Lei Yin is very clear that this matter must be related to that evil blade. Naoko's grandmother also probably guessed. Fearing that Naoko will worry, he didn't say it.

Because the guy cutting people at the scene is too bloody, Lei Yin feared Naoko will see and her heart can't withstand, therefore he hugged her to ran outside.

"Lei, I can go on my own. " Naoko saw that they're quite far from the hotel, thus she opened her mouth to say.

“Wait a minute. “

Naoko had to let him continue to run, after a while she suddenly said: “Lei, am I heavy?”

She’s still in the mood the care about this problem. Lei Yin can’t help but chuckle, “Not a bit heavy. This figure of yours I like the most. “

Naoko blushed and put her head on his chest.

Ran for about two kilometers, Lei Yin gradually slowed down, and finally he put Naoko down.

“I wonder what happened to Miss Akashiro and Mr. Hase?” Naoko said with a little worry.

“Don’t worry, they should have escaped. ” As he spoke, Lei Yin gazed at the back.

“Really a maggot of the tarsus bone. ” After a while, he suddenly said to himself.

“Lei, what’s wrong?” Naoko felt that the atmosphere is a bit wrong.

“Don’t be afraid, just a troublesome guy who followed. Just wait a minute, stand behind me and don’t move. “

” I, I know. ” Naoko nervously looked ahead.

Before long, Naoko heard a heavy but very fast footstep in front, and then she saw a figure running over.

In the distant dim light, Naoko saw a quite tall man, although she can’t clearly see his appearance, her intuition told her he’s not very old. The man ran closer and closer, Naoko suddenly felt a very uncomfortable feeling. She had an inexplicable illusion, as if the the man running is probably not human.

The man seemed to have seen Lei Yin, and finally stopped at more than 10 meters in front of him.

After that man stood still, Naoko saw him holding something like a blade in his hand.

Is he that madman? Naoko looked at the man with a little fear.

“Why follow me?” Lei Yin looked at him lightly.

The man’s breathing is very rapid, not because of excessive running caused by asthma, but rather like a wild beast on edge led by a bloody smell, staring closely at Lei Yin.

Not knowing how long, the man finally spoke. It is a very hoarse voice, “Although I don’t know who you are, but I feel that this blade very much wanted to drink your blood. ” His eyes were like a wild beast that saw his prey.

Lei Yin looked at him with pity, “Do you know that you have been controlled by this blade? You should be aware that the time you can stay awake every day is getting shorter. When this blade completely erodes your sanity, you will become a monster who only knows how to kill. “

That man’s breathing became rapid again, “Shut the hell up!”

Lei Yin knows that fighting is unavoidable, he said to Naoko: “You go outside the station and wait for me. “

Naoko desperately shook her head, clutching his hand tightly.

Lei Yin with soft voice: “Be obedient, I’ll be fine. This guy is only half-baked, and have not place him in my eyes. But if you’re here, I will be distracted. ” For fast and latest updates, read this at the translator’s website <http://desolatetl.com>

Hearing his words, Naoko turned around to walk towards the outside station.

After she left, Lei Yin pulled out a black dagger from his belt with his right hand in a reverse grip, and then said: “So it seems that you’re the one who followed me this morning?”

The man did not answer, and suddenly rushed with a blade in his

hands.

What an impatient fellow, Lei Yin flashed his knife sideways to cut, and then turning his sword towards the neck.

The tip of the black sword was at an unimaginable speed, the man hurriedly move, lifting up the hilt with risk to block the deadly sword.

But just as he was blocking the tip of the sword, he suddenly felt a severe blow on his abdomen. The impact was so strong that his whole person was kicked out.

Feeling the mouth filled with a fishy smell, with red eyes, the man gave a loud shout and brandish the blade to cut him across the middle. This blade is faster than any previous blade, the blade seems to have vanished in mid-air.

Lei Yin's eyes flashed a glimmer of sneer, his two feet force back to jump a step, only five centimeters away from the tip of the flashed blade. Then his body seemed to have no inertia, from backward to suddenly move forward, a sword stabbing directly to the man's throat.

To avoid the inevitable, in his eyes can only use his nearest left hand to block in front of his throat.

“Swish”, the black sword went straight through his palm.

Looking at the sword after piercing his palm with its strength still unabated to stab his throat, the man shouted, pushing his left hand aside, this had avoided this extremely dangerous sword(dagger).

But with this opening, Lei Yin unceremoniously kicked his chest and abdomen position.

“Bang”, the man had his whole person fly out, backing up against the collision into a tree trunk two meters away before stopping.

The man had just stood up and immediately spat out a mouthful

of blood. That kick had broken his ribs.

He looked up at Lei Yin with horror, “Who are you?”

Lei Yin looked at him coldly, “Although the blade can in a short period of time maximize your physical strength, but for a normal person, the blade can only play a role as much. You won’t have a third chance. “

Looking at Lei Yin coming at him step by step, the man suddenly hold the blade in his right hand, and then put his blood dripping left hand in the blade and wipe a bit, finally he laughed and said: “I’ll give you, I’ll give you everything, as long as you help me kill this man. “

Is this guy really crazy? Lei Yin is quiet puzzled.

After a while, the man’s laughter suddenly stuck, and then his whole person—like a sudden death, fell to the ground without warning. If you’re seeing this, then you’re not supporting the translator by reading this on another website. Support the translator by reading this at <http://desolatetl.com>

Lei Yin couldn’t help but frowned, because he heard the man’s breathing and heartbeat stopped.

When Lei Yin was considering whether or not to make up a sword again, suddenly, he heard the man’s breathing and heart suddenly returned to normal.

Lei Yin’s eyes grew somewhat dignified, and his intuition told him that this fellow had become different.

The man looked up at Lei Yin and looked down at his hands, and after a while he burst out laughing.

“You are very noisy. ” Lei Yin walked two steps forward with the sword to cut his neck.

Chapter 228 – Evil Blade

“Clang” Lei Yin’s sword slash was blocked before it reached the man’s neck. In fact this was the first time; the man defended against Lei Yin’s sword with his blade. Unprecedented!. At this time, Lei Yin looked at the man astounded by this terrifying change, but this served to arouse his fighting spirit. The man, after the clash was forced to only retreat a step backwards, after which he quickly stabilized himself, immediately brandishing his blade towards Lei Yin’s chest at a terrifying speed – Lei Yin responded quickly—

Along with the movement of his hand, his sword swift, vanished from sight moving towards the man’s neck causing the man to hastily take back his blade, and quickly use it as his epicentre to block and evade this dangerous attack.

At this point, Lei Yin was not going to give the man any chance to get back his composure and sent a kick straight to his abdomen, the man alarmed, gave up any thoughts on counter attacking and quickly avoided a potentially heavy injury by taking a step back in retreat.

Lei Yin was surprised by this outcome and deeply observed the man, smiling strangely, he lightly uttered “interesting”, finished saying, with a heavy step on the ground, he exploded forward with astonishing speed towards the man, the man not shrinking back, rushed forward too, and meeting Lei Yin head on.

The next sets of attacks from the two men were more terrifying and life threatening. This was life and death. In the next few seconds, they had clashed dozens of times at a lightning speed moving back and forth, both of them attacking fiercely hoping to draw out their opponents weak points and deal a turning point damage! Any slight loss of concentration at this moment would be fatal.

It is said by martial arts grandmasters, in a fighting contest or life and death fight, just dealing one move after another or even being able to deal a thousand moves was not enough to win the fight. One must, even in a fight, continue to learn and adapt to the rhythm of the battle, often times, in a life and death battle between experts, several hundred moves is enough to determine who lives or dies. This is because, in a fight, it's not only your martial arts capability that determines the outcome, but your ability to adapt and predict the next move of your opponent and your ability to respond fast accordingly. These little things would determine the outcome of a battle between experts. If one expert momentarily lost focus and made a slight error causing him to be unguarded for a moment, the other expert would take advantage of this error and deal a terrifying blow to decide victory or even death. It's this simple.

This battle was more terrifying in comparison to the battle Lei Yin fought with that experimental body, Brin's brother. He had a formidable physique with equally formidable physical strength but he severely lacked fighting skills. So Lei Yin who fought with him unarmed did not experience any danger much less the threat of death. This time however, the man he was battling with at this moment was completely different-very dangerous. Moreover he was as skilled with his blade as Lei Yin was in the art of the swordsmanship, a top blade master. Even in his many reincarnations, experts at this level, which Lei Yin met, were extremely few. He didn't dare believe he would meet an expert of this level, in this lifetime!

Basking in the feeling of this intense battle, his nerves excited, his mind and body constantly buzzing with excitement. Lei Yin thought; "it has been a long time since I have experienced this exciting feeling of fighting without restraint attacking and defending every fatal sword slash". Excited, Lei Yin delved deeper and deeper into the rhythm of the battle, forgetting everything else, attacking, predicting and dealing with the man's every move and this was the same situation for the man as well!.

In this extremely serene forest, the intense battle raged on, with “clang” sounds made from clashing of a sword and a blade, which often disrupted the quiet of this place. Two shadows moved back and forth at amazing speeds, clashing in the air, then the ground, then the top of a tree, their sword and blade vanishing and reappearing at speeds which seemed like they were flickering between the realms of illusion and reality. They kept attacking their vital points in order to deal severe damage; this was a direct but extremely fatal strategy. At this point, Lei Yin momentum changed, moving exquisitely, his sword blade dancing strangely from side to side leaving what seemed like after images in its wake which were almost visible to the naked eye causing Lei Yin’s image to be enshrouded by his sword shades. This made one person visible and the other invisible. Lei Yin seemed like he was surfing beautifully against turbulent wave currents on the ocean.

This battle continued for what seemed like forever, after which Lei Yin sword blade stopped at the man’s throat. Any slight movement would have ensured the man’s death, this ended the battle instantly.

Lei Yin deeply looked at the man. After a period of silence, Lei Yin suddenly withdrew his blade from the man’s throat and withdrew.

The man didn’t dare continue to attack but breathed out a breath of relief. Panting and trying to stabilize his excited nerves after he just experienced an exciting battle and a near death catastrophe was also calmly watching Lei Yin who was also panting and trying to stabilize his nerves as well.

In this quiet wood, only the sounds of light and heavy breathing of the two people were heard.

Although this battle ended with less than a 100 moves fought, it was however a life and death battle. It was not at all comparable to a sparring session. The physical and mental strength consumption was enormous. Although both men were exhausted, Lei Yin was in

much better shape than the man as a result of constant physical exercises and frequently honing his martial skills. This gave Ley Yin the upper hand.

“Since you were already injured, let’s call it a draw” Ley Yin said this suddenly. He said this in Chinese.

The man replying in Chinese coldly countered “this is a loss. A loss is a loss or do you think I cannot take a loss. I am not narrow minded?”

“Kureji Hai, after all this time, you have not changed this your smelly temper right?” Ley Yin faintly smiling said to the man.

“How did you come to look like that?” Kureji Hai asked. He couldn’t just merge this youthful appearance of Ley Yin with the appearance he was originally familiar in ages past. After all he could not be mistaken after experiencing this person’s art of the sword which was very similar to the person in his memory. He however couldn’t bear to ask in confusion and for clarification.

“Ha” Lei Yin laughed, shrugging his shoulders, disinclined to explain said “are you not the same? Why don’t you look at yourself in a mirror and you will see how you look presently. I am interested in knowing how you happen to be in Japan and how you also possessed this man’s body?”

Just like Kureji Hai, how could Lei Yin not recognize him? Experts at this level as long as you have fought with them once, it is hard to forget their moves not to mention, he fought Kureji Hai at least 20 times in the past. Even if he looks changed completely, Lei Yin would still recognize him.

“What? Is this not China? Am I in Japan unexpectedly?” Kureji Hai shouted unbelievably. After rearranging his thoughts, he suddenly coming to a realization pointed at Lei Yin with a light smile and said “he he in that lifetime, you had a much better life compared with me, at least in this lifetime, we are in the same situation.”

Lei Yin too lazy to manage him, sheathed his black sword said to him “Although I also possessed this body, we are not in the same situation at all. In one sentence, you are 500years in the future from your dynasty era now. So tell me, how did you get attached to this man?”

Kureji Hai surprised for a moment, murmured to himself... “Mother, I have actually spent 500 years in deep sleep, this is really too long!” adjusting himself, he slid to sit down against the trunk of a tree. Just after sitting down, a sharp pain jolted him, checking his body, he realized the broken bones of ribs and chest, but lucky enough, there was no major shift in their position. His mood extra sullen, remembering Ley Yin caused it all, looked up, shouted curses at Ley Yin and his ancestors.. venting his anger in the only possible way not daring to challenge Ley Yin at this time.

Ley Yin’s face black, knew the best way to shut him up was to challenge him again but after looking at him in a terrible shape, he felt soothed. This will do for now. Ley Yin directly ignored him.

After a while of venting, Kureji Hai said “then, in the eastern dynasty, some bastards placed a bounty on me. I was constantly hunted. I killed a lot of the bounty hunters that hunted me down, but that wasn’t enough. It would have been only a matter of time before they killed me. I listened to a friend say there was an island with a small country in it called Dongying country of the coast of the eastern China Sea. Pirates inhabited that island. I fled there and settled there after slaughtering several Japanese pirates. From there I moved to Japan.

I stayed in Japan for more than 5 years. At that time, there was chaos as a result of the unceasing wars everywhere. I really had good times then.*sighing as if remembering the good times*

Anyone I wanted to kill, I killed especially those who were not pleasing to the eye. Later, some mysterious people came to disturb this grandfather, annoyed by them, I couldn’t bear, and I killed them and burnt down their useless hideout ha ha... But bad times

came after I saved a beautiful lady. I didn't think she was related to those mysterious people, after being planned by her, they caught me but didn't kill me immediately. They took me to their temple.

I later found out they were the minions of Ishihara Masanobu, who initially placed a bounty on my head causing me to be chased down in China. They wanted to use me as sacrifice to create a blade. They claimed I had the ghostly physique which could be used to kill Lord Nobunaga, who was then called evil god. F**king bullshit, I wanted to strangle them. sighing he continued "Pity, I was stripped of my body, my soul thrown into the furnace to merge with the blade during the forging process. I thought I would die as a result, but my soul actually lived on as a part of the blade."

How many years after this, I am unable to recall, I slowly found out that anyone who used this blade and was willing to give up his body, I can possess it and live on as that person.

But over the long years, this did not happen because those who have used this blade lost their sanity to mindless slaughtering and eventually died wastefully. I didn't even get the chance to communicate with them.

However this body is special.....

He once used the blade to kill as a teen, after that he was locked up for it. Ten years later, he killed once more with the blade, maybe because of his previous experience with this killing desire, his minded was not quickly corroded like the others and so I was able to communicate with his soul. After this, the rest you should be very clear.

"This clears up things, at that time, you suddenly vanished! So you were in Japan. Ha-ha. You really deserved the suffering. Originally, your soul hid in this blade, if I had known, I would have flushed this blade down the toilet for good measure. You know what the toilet is? I will tell you-Toilet is the sh*t pit. Ha ha". Lei Yin laughed looking rather regretful.

Kureji Hai clenched his teeth, he couldn't bear but curse this fool "wash your head in preparation after this master is done healing, would shove this blade up your ass!" hmph!

Lei Yin was not willing to continue arguing with old foggy, continued asking "do you know where the man obtained this blade from"

Kureji Hai glared him; not willing to continue to haggle with Lei Yin said "I don't know how this blade got to his home. However I know it was his family heirloom. In his teens, curiously playing with the blade it controlled him, and he killed his uncle and after which he was locked up for several years for it.

After getting married to a woman he loved later on, his wife was admired by the young master of a gang, which led to her was capture, torture and pitiful death. Seeking revenge, he stole this blade and went on a killing spree."

Kureji Hai thinking suddenly said "strange..... how would I know so much about this guy"

Lei Yin understood much about reincarnation explained "your soul has integrated with his body and you will slowly absorb his memories and know everything he knows, lets go"

Kureji Hai not willing to go with Lei Yin said "no, I will stay here to adjust my body condition"

Lei Yin didn't speak again, after thinking for a moment, handed him a credit card and business card. "This is my business card has my address and phone number, you can find me with it. This credit card can be used to withdraw money at the ATM machine and the password required is 324342. As for how to operate the ATM machine, you will get to find that out too as you absorb more of his memories. It's advisable not to ask others about this. Put that blade away and try as much as possible not to use or it will be very troublesome.

I will head out first.....”

Chapter 229 – Kureji 's Karma

“Hey, you have not told me how you reincarnated into the body of this child?” Kureji Hai asked Lei Yin when he saw him leaving.

Lei Yin's form vanished. His voice reverberating in the air: “I will tell you the next time we meet”. Watching Lei Yin's form vanish from sight Kureji couldn't help but grumble.

Naoko worried, saw Lei Yin appear before her, she was startled but she ran into his bosom as fast as possible.

Lei Yin's felt sorry, his eyes mild, gently stroked her silky long hair and apologized “I am sorry. Made you excessively worried. I am fine.”

Naoko quiet hugged him tightly unwilling to let go, she was scared Lei Yin would disappear the moment she let go, held onto him tightly, indulging fully in the comfort of his warmth.

Lei Yin understood the evil blade alone was no threat to him, but the one who wielded the evil blade. However Naoko didn't know this, she was worried Lei Yin would lose himself to the power of the evil blade.

Lei Yin unhappy to have caused her so much worry held her tightly, his heart felt gloomy.

A short while later, Naoko relaxed gradually, assured he was not going anywhere sobbed gently. Lei Yin comforted her, stroked her hair gently much like a child.

Lei Yin watched her, eyes full of gentle light, saw she was wearing only socks remembered he carried her and jumped out the window without giving her the chance to wear shoes. Feeling rather sorry, lei Yin knelt, his back to her said: “climb, I will carry you on my back”.

Naoko refuted “I can walk myself!”

“Be obedient, climb quickly!” Lei Yin insisted.

Naoko looked at him gently, walked over; she lightly put her hands on his shoulders.

This was the first time Lei Yin carried her on his back. Naoko could not help but feel sweet in her heart. She leaned in closer, her hands tightly winding around his shoulders hugged his neck firmly. She rested her head on his back enjoying his warm temperature.

Naoko emotionally overwhelmed, raised her head, her voice soft, whispered “Lei”

“Yes”....

We will always be together. Never leave me okay? “Her raised head closer to his face gently nudged him.

Lei Yin turned his head to look back, light, kissed her lips. She responded gently, eyes closed savored the taste of his lips.

Lei Yin calmly spoke “I will forever take care of you, after our death, our ashes will be mixed together”

Naoko unable to contain her emotions, tears filled her eyes, took Lei yin’s lips with hers.

.....

After what seemed like forever, Lei Yin said suddenly: “Naoko”

“Yes?” Naoko red-faced, answered, looking at him coquettishly.

“My neck is a bit sour.”

Chapter 230 – Lovers

“Lei, let me help you clean your back, okay?” In the hot springs, Naoko looked at Lei Yin softly.

Lei Yin nodded with a smile and turned around and laid down on the edge of the hot spring, his back to her. He picked up a can of beer to drink whilst enjoying the wonders of Naoko soft hands.

Naoko walked up to Lei Yin, with a towel, she very gently wiped his back.

“Lei.” After a while, Naoko suddenly whispered his name.

“yes?” Lei Yin whose eyes were closed answered, he was enjoying the pleasurable feeling of warmth and relaxation from Naoko’s steady movements.

“Do you love having many children?”

“Hmm? What made you say that?”

“At the time, we were at the Takeda family, you said having more children at home would be fun and I also noticed how good you were with Alice, you were very good!

Lei Yin smiled, “I didn’t think you would remember my words so clearly, actually speaking, I can,t say I love having many children, but I feel the home will feel alive with many children around, but sometimes they can be noisy, after all, not all little brats head can be like Alice, so quiet and obedient. My turn, why did you bring up this conversation suddenly?”

Naoko was silent for a moment, then she whispered her face closer to his, “I want to have your baby if you want.”

Lei Yin gradually opened his eyes, his eyes looked pensive, for a long time he did not say a word.

In the hot springs, they both of them suddenly became very quiet.

After a long and nerve tensing quiet, Lei Yin slowly turned back, He stared at her profoundly.

His right hand slowly rose and gently stroked her left side of her face. Lei Yin said softly: “I do not want children, you are already enough for me.”

Naoko’s body trembled slightly, she lowered her head and whispered: “You... you already know?”

His left hand also stretched out, and Lei Yin gently hugged her into his bosom, he brought her head close, He said: “women with cardiovascular disease, especially congenital heart disease, if they were to get pregnant, it is the same as committing suicide, and this is not something known only to professional doctors, I believe you know this as well, I do not want children, I just want us together happy and peaceful.

“lei, am, am I not a useless woman? Even having children, this I can not even do for you. When the doctor told me I can never have children, I was devastated. I really wanted to give birth to your child ... “said Naoko full of grief cried.

watching and listening to her cry like this, Lei Yin could not help but feel an immense heartache.

He Lifted her face and he kissed her lips ferociously.

Naoko held on to his lips with hers roughly, all her emotions poured into this kiss, she held on to his neck hard with both hands. She did not care if she hurt his lips by kissing him so roughly. She needed him.

While kissing her, Lei Yin leaned in closer, with a groan, he used his right thigh to separate Naoko’s legs, and he directly thrust into her body.

The moment, Lei entered her, Naoko jolted from the force.

There was no stopping, as Lei Yin who after entering her, gave her no time to catch her breath, began to constantly bulldoze his

way deep into her delicate body. He began pounding hard and fast.

“Ahn” As Lei continued to increase the strength and of his pounding, Naoko groaned loudly.

Slowly, her pair of slender white legs unconsciously wrapped firmly around his waist, her entire body hung on him, to withstand his barrage of attacks.

The water in the hot springs constantly splashed as a result of the intense action of Lei Yin. Steam of the hot springs covered both of them, from the steam came a suffocating groan and rapid breathing sounds of an intoxicated woman.

Wave after wave of intense pleasure struck Naoko like the tide of a raging ocean, the body of the Naoko was flushed, her face red like blood. Her body filled with sweat and the uncontrollable tears from her eyes constantly mixed together as they flowed down her body. Her originally sensitive body became more and more sensitive to the continuous thunderous attacks of Lei Yin. Almost every intense impact made her feel like she was dying. At this point in time, her mind was already blank, all the nerves focused on that point of connection between her and lei yin, so that this usually shy introvert unconsciously gave more, she rhythmically followed Lei Yin's movement without realizing it.

Lei Yin looked straight into the bliss filled and eyes shut face of Naoko. He kept moving violently whilst looking her; he gently stroked her baby face lovingly.

This fool

A few minutes later, Naoko suddenly screamed loudly, her whole body twitching violently. Even her beautiful jade toes also curved in.

After her scream, her body suddenly softened, her whole body weak lying on her lover, she couldn't move anymore.

Lei Yin kissed her crimson face and held her in his arms, slowly

stroking her back. His fingers moving down and up back softly.

After cooling down, Lei Yin came out of her; his looked at the unconscious Naoko, his face showing deep unhappiness.

After covering her body with her towel, Lei quietly took her back to the room.

In the bathroom, Lei Yin washed her body gently. At this moment, Naoko finally woke up.

When she opened her eyes, Lei Yin carried her up and put her on his thigh, he hugged her and said, “Naoko, you listen to me, for some reasons, I do not have the idea of having future generations. Even if you are not able to have my children, it doesn’t make any difference to me. I want you to know this. This is the truth.

Naoko looked at him with a little bit of surprise. ” You, You..., are you saying the truth?”

Lei Yin calmly looked into her eyes, “it’s true, I swear it.”

Tears fell silently from her face once more, Naoko put her head on his chest and sobbed, her warm fragrant jade body from time to time shook slightly.

Lei Yin did not stop her, but gently wiped her body with a towel soaked with water.

After drying her body, Lei Yin held her waist, helping back to the bedroom.

After he placed her on the cushion sheet on the wooden floor, Lei Yin lay sideways beside her and then looked at her pitifully. He enveloped her in his bosom.

Tears continued to drop out of Naoko’s eyes, but she did not have the heart to manage them, she just kept sobbing in his arms.

He gently wiped the tears with his fingers, Lei Yin used his hands to put one of her fine hands on his face and said softly: “Stop crying, okay?”

“Lei” Naoko choked with a sob, but the tears flowed even more powerfully.

“You....., really are a woman filled with an ocean.” Lei Yin smiled, he adjusted and rested his head on the pillow, and then gently hugged her in his arms.

Naoko put her head on his chest, both hands tightly holding him around his waist, trying to get her entire body into the covering his bosom. Although her body was still weak, she still hugged him tightly, as if as long as she let go of him, he would suddenly vanish.

Her heart condition had always been the biggest shadow in her heart which caused to feel inferior to other women. She did not dare tell him the truth because she knew very well what infertility meant as a woman. Although she believed he was not a man that would abandon her for this reason, she was still afraid of any unforeseen circumstance.

For her, Lei Yin was her whole world. Therefore, she could even separate from her family relationship, from the very person who had reared her for more than ten years in order to wait for Lei Yin to return. Because of her love for Lei, she decided she would risk her life by giving birth to Lei's child.

But Lei told her he did not want children. However, her disorganized thinking could not tell whether he was telling the truth or comforting her. She just wanted to hug him tightly.

lei Yin seeming to feel the unease in her heart, Lei Yin lowered his head and kissed her hair, and then he whispered in her ear and said: “I, I love you, I promise you, we will be together forever, till the day of our death we will not be separated. (Lei Yin also said this for the second time two years later.)

Naoko's whole body shook excitedly, her two hands finally relaxed her hug, her body's slight twitching also gradually stopped.

“Relax, relax Naoko. Be a good girl now, and go to sleep. Okay?” Lei Yin whispered in her ear as if he was trying to coax a little child to sleep.

Slowly, Naoko resting on his chest began to calm herself and her body completely relaxed, but she held him without letting go.

Looking at her fall asleep quietly, Lei Yin's eyes were full of love.

He said to her he didn't want to have children, he really was not consoling her.

Lei Yin who was an immortal existence that had lived many lives, he always regarded himself as a passer-by.

All glory and wealth in the world was nothing but an exaggeration to him.

He only gave his best, when he challenged the world's heroes with a sword in his hand and tried to do something that others simply could not imagine possible. But passing by was still passing by, and when he would be reincarnated again after a few decades or centuries, no one would remember the wonders he did in his time.

The so-called success or failure were just empty gestures to him. After all few hundred years later, a mighty fortress may have been leveled down. However, the only constant things he would meet will be sunrise and sunset.

Since he was only passing by, he did not want to leave any ties behind, and future generations were the biggest ties in his eyes. Therefore, in his constant reincarnations, at best, he only received a few disciples, but from beginning to end, he never left behind any descendants.

And strictly speaking, except for the “first generation” Lei Yin, the offspring born to the bodies of those he reincarnated into would no longer be his real bloodline.

In this world, he just wanted to take good care of this beautiful

woman who loved him, as well as other people who he valued. Only with them, could he temporarily forget his identity as a guest.

Chapter 231: War of the playboys

The next morning, Just as Lei Yin pushed open the door to the room and went in, a soft body rushed over and hugged him tightly.

Lei Yin put the tray in his hand on the table next to him and then placed his arms around her waist and said, “Awake? I was afraid I’d have to wake you up when I got up to get us breakfast”

“I ... I didn’t see you after I got up, I was so scared.” Naoko whispered like a child who was about to be punished for her wrong doing.

“Foolish girl..., let’s have breakfast, have you had your bath yet?

“Oh, I’m sorry, I have not, I haven’t even brushed my teeth, hold on for me!!.” Naoko in panic ran into the bathroom.

Lei smiled faintly, he put the tray down on the table.

Cleaned up, Naoko’s face slightly red from shame sat on the other side of the table as she looked at Lei yin opposite her.

Naoko absentmindedly moved her chopsticks randomly as she played with her breakfast, but she would randomly sneak a peek at Lei Yin who was eating.

“What’s wrong, the food isn’t to your taste?” Lei Yin looked at her strangely and asked.

“No, no, nothing.” Naoko hurriedly lowered her head to eat.

“Good, good... his attitude towards me has not changed”.

Drops of crystalline liquid quietly fell from Naoko’s face into her soup bowl. Her lowered head prevented lei yin from noticing this.

After they finished breakfast, Lei Yin while watching TV news said to her: “A lot has happening lately. So, since we are here we might as well take some time to play around. How about we visit some places. Yes!! I remember you went to Nagoya Primary school, junior high school and high school, take me to your previous

school to visit. How about it?

Naoko eyes lit up, her face immediately revealed an excited expression, “Really!!?”

Lei Yin nodded with a smile.

Naoko joyfully held Lei Yin’s arm. Naoko was delighted a big difference from her previously cautious and solemn mood.

When lei Yin and Naoko left the hotel, they did not go to Nagoya city famous tourist attractions as other tourists did, but they boarded various city commune buses leisurely wandering around and admiring a few eye catching side attractions. When they saw some wonderful side attractions or antique shops, they would get off the bus to visit, after which they check them out and tour its vicinity on foot and later take another bus to continue their wandering. They were very relaxed and carefree.

Although Naoko studied in Nagoya for so many years, but because of her frequent illness during her childhood, she mostly lingered around the vicinity of her school and the home of her grandmother. She had yet to actually visit most of the places in Nagoya city. When Lei Yin asked her the direction to several places she could not answer, She sulkily gave up being a guide and bought herself a map. Naoko sulked for a long time because of this.

Although their journey was so multi directional and aimless, but they also stopped to visit the Japanese temple, the Shrine, Osu Street market and other tourist attractions. Among all the places they visited, they stayed the longest Osu Street market.

The shopping street had a long history, and still retained its rich “Down Town (Market)” style, in which almost everything could be found here. It had large malls with electrical stores, electronic and digital stores; there were also many clothing stores which included some traditional clothes kiosks and so on. As a result of the abundant and myriad variety of goods available, their prices were relatively cheaper. This made the shopping market very lively and

during the holidays there were even more customers.

Here Naoko was very excited as she admired the small kiosks that sold ingeniously prepared special indigenous snacks and some unique hand crafted objects which were usually not seen in the big cities. Later, they stopped to eat sushi at nearby antique sushi restaurant, which was said to have been in operation for sixty to seventy years, its ancientness could be seen in its surrounding right down to its exterior and interior decorations and even the table wares. Lei Yin did not like Japanese sushi (TLN: the first sushi racist I have met) this didn't mean it wasn't tasty. However in that shop, Lei Yin was very interested in the store's signature dish "eel rice." This eel rice was not sushi and should not have appeared in a sushi restaurant. But no matter what, it was just too delicious; so no one cared about it being out of place in a sushi restaurant.

Lei Yin enjoyed a lot of things; one of which included savoring the taste of an exquisite meal which was very important. He had also eaten eel rice in Tokyo, but it was far less delicious to the one sold in this shop. He had an amazing appetite, so he ate three bowls.

Naoko also felt that this dish tasted good, and when she saw Lei Yin enjoyed it so much, she humbly asked the chef for his recipe to his specially prepared eel rice.

In fact, the recipe of this eel rice was very simple. Generally first cut into strips or slices the eel meat and grill for a while. Then spread some sauce on it and finally put the grilled eel meat on the freshly cooked rice. Although this practice seemed very simple, but grilling eel meat at the right temperature was important, the preparation of the sauce directly determined the taste of eel rice.

Since this dish was the shop's signature dish, naturally the recipe could not be shared or leaked. But the young chef was completely conquered by the Naoko's beauty and the humble attitude. Regardless of what questions Naoko asked, he answered even more

obedient than a primary school student just admitted. Unfortunately, before he could give a detailed information on the recipe for the preparation of the kitchen's inheritance sauce, the owner of the sushi restaurant coughed terribly and this jolted him out of his state of limbo.

It was already past six o'clock when they came out from the sushi kitchen.

They didn't want to go back to the hotel so early, so the two of them just strolled about.

As they leisurely strolled in the bustling streets, Naoko nestled her head on the shoulders of Lei Yin. She felt drunk on the all emotions coursing through her and the warmth and care she felt from Lei Yin.

Compared with visiting scenic spots, she preferred to do nothing as they were doing now, but comfortably relax and hold on to him walked about slowly.

"Lei, I'm really happy." Naoko whispered.

Lei Yin said: "If you like, we will arrange more trips like this."

"No, it's not the touring that's making me happy, just being with you like this is all that matters to me." Naoko looked at him softly and said.

Lei Yin smiled, "Since you like shopping, when we go back to Tokyo later, we will find more time out to visit the mall and other places like this. good?"

Naoko happily nodded.

Lei Yin saw a movie theater up ahead, he looked at Naoko and said: "can we go see a movie?"

"OK. But no horror movies." Naoko smiled and looked at him.

"Well, a romance movie is on, but I'm not sure I won't fall asleep halfway through the movie."

“It does not matter, I’ll wake you up at the time.” Naoko smiled and then happily put her head on his shoulder.

” Hey Beauty, would you mind having lunch with me?” Ashi said to Kazumi.

She put her book into her bag and glanced at him indifferently: “I’m sorry, I’m not used to eating with strangers.”

“Stranger? Your sentence really hurts, we are in the same department, and I am your immediate senior...h.. h, how are we strangers?”

Unfortunately, Kazumi completely ignored his performances, picked up her bag with other books and walked away from him. Behind her Asasei watched the play as her lips curved slightly, but she also hurried to go out of the class as well.

Looking her moving farther and farther, Ashi laughed, but also slowly went out as well.

Looking at them as all three went out, a few girls had the expression of resentment.

Beginning last week, this third-year student named Ashi suddenly appeared in the horizon of the Kazumi and approached her enthusiastically for a date. This made the girls who had been upset originally because of Yasuda Ogata infatuation with Kazumi feel anguish.

“What exactly is it about that girl?” said one girl angrily.

“I did not think this girl who is usually quiet would be able seduce a man. Another other girl sourly said.

“I would really understand if the boys were average, but why would boys like them also like such a cold woman. I wonder if all the girls in this world are dead.” A tall girl scolded.

Leader of the group of girls had look of contempt, “I feel like

throwing up any time I see her proud look.”

A boy nearby who heard them said with an expression of fright: “A woman’s hatred is really scary.”

His companion said: “But then again, all the students in this department have become more attractive recently.

“But Kazumi’s character is as inaccessible as before.”

“I feel the same way.”

Whilst walking down the corridor, Asasei quiet looked back and whispered to her friend: “kazumi, he is still following us.”

“Do not mind him.” Kazumi continue to move forward.

When they walked out of the school building, this time, a handsome man in a casual wear walked over, “beautiful, you are doing good?.”

“Hello, ”Kazumi greeted him. After several months of frequently seeing each other, she had become accustomed to the existence of Ogata Yasuda and wouldn’t feel as uncomfortable as before.

Yasuda turned around and said to the kazumi: “I am here to pick you up.”

“I am sure even primary school students do not need adults to pick them up from school, at least I should not be inferior to primary school students.” Kazumi replied unconsciously.

“It’s not the same? It’s normal to pick up your favourite girls when they are done with their classes,” Yasuda said without any thought.

And kazumi frowned, “Please do not just say those frivolous words to me. This will only make me think that you are too shallow.”

“I am just being honest, nothing to do with been frivolous.”

“What a pity your so-called honesty looks like a frivolous one.”

“It was just that you are not willing to understand me enough. If you are willing to get to know me well, you will find that there are a lot of good sides to me.”

“I’m sorry, I do not intend to do such boring things.”

Yasuda smiled. He looked at the calm expression on this annoying girl; he now liked the feeling of bickering with her more and more.

Compared with three months ago, she was obviously less hostile to him and was no longer so cold. Although she still didn’t give him any face and always answered him ruthlessly, but he felt he had taken a big step forward with his achievements so far. And the more contact he had with her, the more he was attracted by her unique temperament. There had been several times, he almost could not help but want to hug her hard and to use his own lips to dismantle the cold expression on her face. But he eventually defied those thoughts because he knew that if he did that, all his efforts so far would have been wasted and there would be no chance of approaching her in the future.

“Yasuda, you also came, really a coincidence ah.” Also having a good appearance, Ashi came slowly over at this time, his face revealing interesting smile.

Seeing Ashi stroll over to this place, Ogata became alert.

The main reason why Yasuda wanted to pick up the Kazumi after she got out of class was because he heard what Ashi had been up to. Although he did not know why this guy suddenly approached the kazumi, Yasuda, who understood his personality and had a very bad sense of crisis, therefore he wanted to come here and take a look.

Once upon a time, these two equally good looking guys stood together, attracting the attention of many passing girls.

“I wouldn’t want to hinder you guys as you reminisce.”Kazumi

said faintly and then took Asasei who was a little dazed away

Finally, Ashi and Ogata Yasuda after looking eyeing each other cautiously turn around ready to keep up with the girls.

“Yasuda, is this girl is your prey?” Ashi suddenly stopped him.

Ogata Yasuda stopped and looked back at him. “I will warn you now, that I will never let you go if you dare to fight with me for her.”

Ashi chuckled and said: “tut tut, didn’t think that the legendary Ogata Yasuda will say that, this is not like you at all, look at you so nervous, I starting to get more and more interested in this girl.”

Yasuda’s eyes flamed as he got even angrier, “Ashi, you’d better not anger me.”

Laughing, Ashi said “Do you think I’m really scared of you? Honestly, I was not really interested in the game, but it is completely different if the opponent turned out to be you.”

Yasuda said coldly, “Why are you doing this? It does not benefit you at all.”

“You do care about her, but you don’t want to say it, you have tried for more than three months to get this girl... still there has not been any positive result, this is not like the previous Ogata Yasuda. Ha, I hope you do not let me win this game too easily”

Ogata Yasuda sneered, “If you do not use any despicable means, I do not mind competing with you at all, but if you dare to do anything funny to the Kazumi, I will ensure you regret it.” Having said that, he no longer looked at Ashi and walked on.

Looking at Yasuda’s back, Ashi showed a proud smile.

Chapter 232: Nagoya High school

In the middle of the night, Naoko was initially asleep, woke up abruptly due to an endless stream of crying.

As she was partially awake, she thought she was hallucinating, but realized slowly that she wasn't.

As Naoko slowly sat up, she looked down at the sleeping Lei Yin and could not help but reveal a gentle smile.

After putting on her silk thin dressing gown, Naoko slowly stood up and gracefully went out of the room.

She walked past the wooden corridor and went outside. Under the silver bright rays of the moon, Naoko walked over to the cherry tree in the middle of the back garden. A little girl in a kimono sat there with her head buried between her knees and wept with great sadness.

Naoko saw this and she was touched, she felt the same way a mother would when she saw her child in pain.

Naoko as a child was prohibited from playing outside the family house because of her heart condition.

Although she could not enjoy the fun of playing around like other children, Naoko did not feel too lonely because of her siblings.

However, after her siblings left for school one after the other, Naoko started feeling more alone than she usually did before. Although her mum looked after her and accompanied her at home, children like her needed playmates around her age, rather than playing around with old people.

The situation continued until a few years later, her body gradually stabilized and she was able to attend school like the others.

At this moment, as she looked at the little girl sitting alone under

the cherry tree crying, Naoko felt a strange feeling well up in her. All she wanted to do was comfort this child.

So, Naoko slowly walked up to her.

“Naoko...” when she was about to walk in front of the little girl, Lei’s deep voice sounded.

Naoko looked back, she saw Lei Yin walking up to her in their matching dress robes, his hand clutching his overall as he walked over.

“I’m sorry i woke you up.” Naoko replied apologetically.

“It’s not a problem,” said Lei Yin, covering her with the overall.

After helping her, Lei softly said: “it’s a bit cold out tonight, be careful not to catch a cold.”

“Lei ...” Naoko very hugged his waist, her body tightly nestled in his arms.

Gently stroking her hair, Lei Yin said: “Let’s go back to the room.”

Naoko was about to agree. Suddenly, she remembered the crying little girl and said to him: “Lei, this little girl has been crying here, and I want to know why she is crying.”

“What little girl?” Lei Yin asked.

Naoko looked back and said: “It’s the little girl that was sitting under this tree crying. W..Where has she gone to?!”

“She was just here, a moment ago.” Naoko looked around the garden, her eyes searching. She was certain that there had been a weeping little girl here

“Oh.. Maybe its the hotel manager’s kid, it’s no use looking for her, let’s go back.”

“Ok.” Naoko took a look around once more and nodded.

Lei Yin bowed low kissed her face and held back into their room.

Naoko lay in Lei Yin's arms; she gazed upon his face intently, her expression revealing her overwhelming emotions.

The next morning, they continued to visit various Nagoya tourist spots as they did the day before.

After lunch at noon, Lei Yin insisted they visit Naoko's high school where she was studied. Naoko was really pleased with lei Yin about this.

Naoko's former school was an all-girls high school located in southern Nagoya; it was a well-known school in Japan. The school had towering high walls, which kept many prying eyes out and unaware of the situation within. However, such all-girls college that was composed entirely of female students and mainly female teachers and only a small number being male teachers, remained a place which aroused the obnoxious fantasies of many men, especially young boys.

The only time this all-girls' high school would be open to the public was only during the annual school festival which lasted a day (TL: Too short I am sure the boys would agree me on this.) At that time, the school would invite teachers and students from other schools nearby to attend the celebration. However, in order to limit the number of students, other than the teacher, other students will pay for admission by obtaining entrance tickets.

So on this day of each year, the tickets to this Festival became the most sought after object; each ticket became the object of competition amongst various male student. Although these tickets were competed for, it was always available to be sold on the day of the festival albeit at much higher price. However no matter how expensive the tickets got, it was always sold out completely.

Regardless of whether the tickets were sold or bought at a high price, everyone had only one purpose: to get into this island of beautiful girls, where all boys fantasized of living.

After about an hour's drive, Lei Yin and Naoko got off the bus

near the entrance of the girls' high school.

In the hallway outside the quiet reception hall, rapidly approaching footsteps could be heard. The approaching footsteps quickly reached the door to the reception hall. Then the door was forced open, and finally, a short-haired young woman came in.

The woman hastened her footsteps when she saw the woman sitting on the couch.

"It's really you sister Naoko so you really came." The woman excitedly took Naoko hands and jumped up and down and screaming excitedly.

"You, you are Ikehara?" Naoko was not sure as she looked at the woman in front of her.

"It's me, I am Ikehara, Naoko sister you still remember me, I'm so happy."

"Why are you here?" Naoko was also delighted to see her former schoolmate.

"When I graduated from university, I came here to be a teacher, and I really didn't think I would see you here again," Chihiro Ikehara said more and more excitedly.

At this moment, a coughing sound came from behind, and then the voice of a middle-aged woman passed over. "teacher Ikehara, please do not forget you are a teacher, please mind your behaviour in the school premises, if the students had seen your uncanny actions a moment ago, how would that have been?"

Chihiro Ikehara made a funny face and looked Naoko, and then turned to the middle-aged woman and said, "I'm sorry, director, and I will pay attention next time."

Naoko saw this face from the past; she looked at the serious faced elder behind Ikehara, this unsmiling elder had not changed. After a brief moment, Naoko immediately went over and greeted respectfully: "Hello, Mrs Himeji."

Mrs Himeji smiled and looked at her for a moment, then said: “Naoko, it has been a long time.”

“Yes, I have not seen you for several years since I graduated from high school. Your health has been good?”

“I’m fine, how about you?”

“You care? I am also very good.”

Then Naoko introduced Lei Yin to the two of them.

When Ikehara knew that this plain looking man turned out to be Naoko’s fiancé, she could not help but observe him more carefully, a little bit surprised showing on her face.

After exchanging a few words with them, Mrs Himeji had to leave the reception hall to handle some issues, before leaving; she had Ikehara attend to them as guests. Ikehara immediately agreed to this.

After Mrs Himeji left the reception hall, Ikehara immediately relaxed, breathing out hot air said: “Fortunately, she finally left; otherwise I would not be able to even speak.”

Naoko smiled and said: “sister Ikehara you are still as afraid of Himeji teacher as you were before.”

Ikehara said with a smile, “You know, she was a very serious person, when we studied under her tutelage and now i work with her, she still scolds me...I am wrong here, I am wrong there.. Even when I laugh a little louder than usual, she would say I give the give the teachers a bad reputation.

Naoko smiled, “I really didn’t think you would be a teacher, even a teacher at the high school you attended.”

Chihiro Ikehara sighed as she replied “I didn’t think so myself, after graduating from college I worked at a bank for more than a year, I really could not stand the dull working environment, so I resigned. After coming out, I looked for other jobs and got two

other jobs, but I didn't get the satisfaction I was looking for. Finally, accidentally, I participated in the teacher qualification examination, which I didn't expect to get through, but afterward, the most funny aspect was I was actually assigned to come here to report here, when teacher Himeji saw me in the new teachers queue, and her facial expression was so funny I laughed "Chihiro Ikehara laughed.

Naoko looked at this character from high school that had not changed a bit since the old days, was still her carefree school self, Naoko could not help but chuckle.

After chatting with Naoko and learning about her, Ikehara brought them to the campus to go shopping and site seeing.

The all-girls' high school had a very large surface area, they had a standard stadium, several tennis courts, and other facilities such as basketball courts, indoor swimming pool and these other sports facilities were met the highest standards.

As they strolled in the three-lane road, they saw the students perform in the various sports activities. Naoko felt nostalgic whilst she watched all this.

Chihiro Ikehara further introduced: "Since we graduated, there has been a lot of expansion here, and a few tennis courts and gymnastics halls were built later on. What a pity, we didn't have these facilities when we were studying here."

Naoko after looking at several passing students asked: "The school uniforms have changed?"

"Yes, the school uniforms are not the same as ours at the moment, the skirts are a lot shorter than they were." "Ikehara said very delightfully.

Listening to her say this, Naoko couldn't help but laugh.

At this moment, Lei Yin suddenly asked Ikehara: "tell me some of the things that happened to Naoko when he was studying here?"

Hearing this question, Chihiro Ikehara immediately became very excited and said: “Naoko was in fact very famous; from the first grade to the third grade of high school, she was the precious flower of the school. She not had her beauty she had a good character, so she was the most popular girl. Heh heh, many juniors wrote letters of admiration to her and do you know what she did after receiving those letters? She really met those girls personally and she gave the letters was back to them and thanked them for their love, but after she did that, the girls got more crazy, and some girls even waited at the classroom door to get a glimpse of her. This made Naoko extremely anxious and caused her to flee after every class.

Naoko blushed, she said: “Well sister, enough! Don’t talk about it again. She smiled sweetly and said to Lei: you are not being fair, how you would suddenly ask such a question!”

Lei Yin heart jumped when she ask him this question coquettishly, could not help but smile and held her fair soft hands.

“Lei.....” let us not be so intimate before sister Ikehara.” Naoko could not help but feel ashamed, but eventually she couldn’t free hand from his, after struggling a bit, she shamefacedly gave up and let him hold her.

Ikehara smilingly looked at them.

Chapter 233: Beauty from the past.

“Mrs. Kawasaki, do you still remember her?” Ikehara had a big grin on her face as she said to a 50-year-old woman in front of them.

“Hello, Mrs Kawasaki, I am Hasegawa Naoko, it’s been a long time we saw.” Naoko said to her.

“Are you Naoko!?” Kawasaki adjusted her eye glass to look carefully at the young woman in front of her.

“Yes, I am Naoko.”

“It’s really you Naoko!. You’re getting more beautiful. I almost could not recognize you.”

Mrs. Kawasaki said with a smile.

“You are looking very good. How are you?”

“You don’t bother, I am good. Did you come back to visit us? good”

“Yes, this is my fiance, and he’s called Masashi. This is Mrs Kawasaki; she has been here for over 30 years. She runs the school library and hall of records.” Naoko said introducing them

Lei Yin stepped forward to say hello.

At this time, Ikehara said to Mrs. Kawasaki: Madam Kawasaki, I want to take Naoko along me to the hall of records for a quick look. Finished, she took the Naoko’s hand and led her inside.

In the spacious and quiet hall of records, Ikehara was constantly looking through the various file cabinets where records were kept.

After a while, she suddenly exclaimed loudly, “Found.” Then she ran out with a thick album in her hand.

“This is sister Naoko’s session photograph as well as student information, this also includes the information of other students

in our class” Chihiro Ikehara said while holding open a picture album.

The first page of the album showed the group photograph of hundreds of students. Chihiro Ikehara smiled and said: “Mr Masashi, can you identify sister Naoko in this photograph?”

Lei smiled, turned around and looked at the picture.

After a while, he pointed to a student in the middle section of the picture and said, “Is this Naoko?”

“Bingo, yes, you are right.” Chihiro Ikehara laughed and looked at Naoko. She saw Naoko smile softly as she looked at Lei Yin

“This is the picture of the first school festival we experienced. We ran a coffee shop during this festival. A lot of naughty foreign school boys flooded the coffee shop. Heh heh. This is me in the long skirt, really cute. I was in grade one at the time. I was bullied by a sister in the second grade, I pleaded with her for a long time before she was willing to let me go. I’ll show you the coffee shop when we go back. Yes, Naoko do you remember sister Momo. Remember we were almost always together. I still have some pictures of her.

Hearing that name, Naoko’s eyes lit up brightly with the flavour of missing reflecting in them. She sighed and said “I don’t know what happened to Momo? Since she went to Hokkaido, I have not gotten any news of her.”

“I don’t know about her whereabouts as well .Mr Masashi, this is the picture of the school talent show and party that took place during the Cultural Festival and Naoko was a performing artiste at the show.”

“oh? What did she perform?” Lei Yin asked Curiously, Chihiro Ikehara, “she was a solo pianist, Naoko wore a black long gown that day and she played the piano calmly before all the teachers and students in the school. At that time I found myself goofing at

her as she performed. After that I searched and gathered everything about her I could.”

Lei murmured under his breath: “you were not among her fans that wrote fan letters to her right?”

Ikehara original did this? Naoko only just found out about this..

Lei Yin said to Naoko: “I now know that you can play the piano.

Naoko a little embarrassed said: since I went to college, I have not had time to play the piano, and now I would be even worse than ever at it. In fact, on that day I never intended to perform, it was my good friend Momo who secretly added my name to the performer’s list. When I was on the stage I was so afraid I could die.”

At this time, Chihiro Ikehara suddenly said loudly: “Mr Masashi, this is Naoko’s school photo and student information.”

Lei Yin looked at this picture. He saw a sixteen-seventeen year old beautiful girl with jade white skin and bright pupils. She was dressed in a sailor-styled school uniform. Although her facial features looked very similar to those of the mature Naoko, there were some very unique and perceptive differences between them. Although this was only a picture, Lei Yin felt momentarily dazed as he felt the girl in the picture was staring back at him.

“This photo was well captured; can I get the studio to make a copy of it for me?” Lei Yin suddenly said to Ikehara after gazing at the picture for a long time

“Yes. Why didn’t I think of this? It’s still an hour before the studio closes. Ok, you wait here. I will get two copies done at the studio ” Ikehara carefully placed the picture into his pocket and ran out.

“Sister” Naoko wanted to stop her, but she moved too quickly.

“It seems your schoolmate really likes you, am I also her rival in

love?

Lei Yin said with a smile.

“Fool.” Naoko smiled softly.

Lei Yin suddenly walked behind and twinned his arms around her waist.

“Lei, we are in a school, what if someone comes in?”

Naoko felt little shame and anxiety as she glanced at the door.

“What are you afraid of? We are not doing anything bad. By the way; what about your school uniform?”

Naoko had no way to struggle with him and had to give up, letting him hold her. She turned her head to see him smile evilly, “after graduating from high school, I left my school uniform at my grandma’s place. Why the sudden interest in my school uniform?”

Lei Yin breathed in her ear and said: “you will bring it back and wear it for me.”

Naoko finally understood his evil intentions, she blushed helplessly, “I can’t, the dress wouldn’t fit me anymore.”

“I don’t care. If you don’t agree with me, I will continue holding you and will not let you go even if your friend comes back.”

“You are too bad.”

Lei Yin didn’t speak, he only tightened his arms around her waist pressing her firmly to his body.

Feeling his breathe so close and the heat from his body caused the feeling of weakness suddenly erupt from Naoko, her breathing unconsciously became urgent.

“OK. I promise you. Quickly let go ...” But Lei yin did not wait for her to finish. He engulfed her lips with his.

Naoko was worried of being caught in this conspicuous position. She tried hard to stop, but Lei Yin did not let her go. He wantonly

enjoyed the sweet taste of her lips.

After seeing that picture some moments ago, Lei Yin was mesmerized by the tranquil and pure temperament of the girl in that picture.

These two girls were separated by space and time. One of the past and the other of the present, both in different space and time. However they were one and the same person, exceedingly beautiful and now in his arms. This contradictory but unified feeling of wonder caused Lei Yin inexplicable excitement. If this was not a school hall, he would have done her on the spot. In this quiet hall of records only the heavy breathing and groaning of two people could be heard.

After a while, Naoko, who initially tried to push his hands off her neck, gradually turned her head around, and her partly open lips separated to take his lips in as well, lei yin teased her continuously with his lips and tongue as she let him in.

Lightly teasing and tasting her lips with his warm soft tongue at the same time, Lei Yin felt her body heat rising tremendously.

He knew if they went on like this, she would really be fired up. Lei Yin had to slow down his movements.

However, at this time, the door of the hall of records was suddenly opened, followed by the sounds of female screams and items falling to the ground and some erratic scrambling.

Lei Yin actually miscalculated this time. He still had his cultivation. As long as someone even approached the door, he would immediately sense it. But this time he was entirely focused on Naoko, He momentarily forgot to monitor his environment. But so what... Naoko was just so beautiful.

“Sorry... sorry,” the young woman picked up the books on the floor in a flurry and ran out of the hall with great speed. But even in the young woman’s confused state, after she went out, she

frantically banged the doors like she was just in a fight. Lei yin found this scene very funny.

Lei Yin turned to look at Naoko, he saw she was completely afraid to raise her head up.

Grinning, Lei hugged her and joked: “let’s continue from where we stopped.”

Naoko looked at him with her red face, “you are too bad!, I told you I didn’t want to!!!.”

Lei Yin smiled, “What do we do now? lets go look for the lady that walked in us, good?”

“Damn,” Naoko complained, but she gently punched his chest.

Lei, this evil-hearted lover, she buried her head on his chest.

“Hurry up and let’s go quickly.”

Naoko was afraid to get caught again.

“Don’t worry, no one will come in for a while.

Naoko felt ashamed, but she felt a little helpless and a little happy as she held him lightly.

“Naoko Sister, this is my colleague and friend, she is called Yuko. Yuko, this is whom I have often mentioned to you-Naoko sister, and this is her fiancé, called Mr Masashi.” Whilst outside the school restaurant ready to eat, Ikehara brought a young woman wearing Persian styled eye glass and introduced.

“How are you,” the young woman greeted both of them with an awkward smile.

“Hello.” Naoko red faced found it difficult to speak. She recognized this Yuko, was the same person who caught her and Lei kissing. She didn’t think they’d meet so soon and she was sister Hara’s friend. Naoko felt very embarrassed.

Naoko’s shameful feeling overwhelmed her, but the same

couldn't be said for an old monster with very thick facial skin like Lei yin, who naturally responded her with a smile "hello," like they'd only just met for the first time.

Ikehara did not find perceive the weird atmosphere around her the least bit. Whilst they were eating, she brought out two copies of the duplicated picture from her handbag and then handed one of them to Lei Yin, "Mr Masashi, this is one copy of the duplicated picture for and the other for me..."

"Thank you," Lei remembered his emotions when he saw this picture initially and looked carefully at the girl in the picture. After a while, he took his wallet out and placed the picture very carefully into the transparent layer of the wallet, so he could see it whenever he opened his wallet.

Seeing his slow and careful movements caused to Naoko feel both shy and sweet in her heart.

While they ate, Ikehara mentioned a lot of funny and interesting events that occurred among the students.

From a female student being chased by a teacher in the infirmary because she was afraid of the vaccine injections to many female students deliberately starving themselves so that they could lose weight because of this a female student fainted from starvation.

Naoko found these stories really interesting, coupled with Ikehara vivid storytelling; she could not help but laugh continuously.

Naoko came out of the bathroom in her bathrobe humming under her breath merrily and sat beside Lei yin who in turn watched her as she dried her hair.

He observed she was very happy and relaxed, Lei Yin smiled and said: "Today you seem very happy?"

"Well, I went to visit my former school and saw my sister again, and I'm really happy." Naoko put her towel down and rested her

head on his shoulder.

He hugged her, carried her and placed her on his lap. Lei wrapped his arm around her waist and said: "If you like, let's stay for a few more days and spend more time with your friend."

"But it has already been more than a week since we traveled, it's not very good to spend more time here." Naoko had always been worried this vacation would affect his studies.

"Fool, there is nothing to be worried about." Lei Yin lowered his head and used his left hand to caress her fair soft feet.

Naoko felt a bit flustered when she saw him subtly caress her feet, her body shivered slightly as she leaned in closer..

"Naoko, your feet are really cute." Lei said as he kissed her, from her face all the way to her earlobe..

"Do you ... like it?" Naoko's face already crimson, her breath rapid as she asked.

"Of course, I like them, just as I like the rest of your body," Lei said, rounding her waist with his right arm.

"Lei ..."

"how about this?"

"Ah ..."

At this point, Naoko was getting into the mood. "Today I saw your high school pic, I have an idea, I would like to hear more about the little you."

"Now ... isn't it late already," Naoko said unusually.

"Yes, but I want to have more of you, including younger you from high school." yes, yes, that's it.

"I ... want to meet the younger you."

Naoko turned on, inclined closer to Lei Yin for more of his touch and words.

"Your body is really sensitive." Lei Yin kissed her forehead, then

picked her up and headed for the bedroom.

After a while, sounds of moaning and groans of pleasure from the pleasant voice of a lady were heard....

Chapter 234: Freedom

At midnight, Naoko was awakened by weird noises again.

When Naoko sat up, she found that Lei Yin, who was supposed to be beside her, was gone.

Where did he go?

Naoko put on robe, and left the room rather cautiously.

When Naoko went outside, she found Lei Yin pushing the little girl in a kimono, she had seen the night before on a swing.

The little girl was having a very good time especially when the swing went up, she laughed. Her laughter like a delightful silver bell sounding across the garden and it was her laughter that woke Naoko.

“Lei.” Naoko shouted gently.

Lei, at the back of the little girl raised his head and waved to her.

Naoko went forward to meet him.

“Lei, who is she?” Naoko looked strangely at the little girl sitting on the swing.

Lei Yin said: “She has always been alone; she has been looking for someone to play with, so I’ll play with her.”

I was just like her when I was younger. Naoko was clear on how lonely she was when younger, she felt the same loneliness in this little girl..

After gathering her thoughts, she said, “Can I stay and play with her?”

Lei considered this for a moment and said, “Yes, but when you are tired, you have to come back to the room to sleep, you know that right?”

“I know.”

After the little girl came down from the swing, she had a strange look as she carefully observed Naoko and after a while she turned to ask Lei Yin: “Brother, who is she?”

“She is my wife, she wants accompany us to play. What game do you want to play this time?”

“You really want play with me?” The little girl asked, uncertainty glistening in her eyes.

Lei Yin touched her head and nodded with a smile. “Yes.”

The girl’s face flushed in excitement; happily she pulled his hand and ran.

“Are you ready?” Lei Yin said loudly as his face was pressed against a wall.

“No, I am not. &%**%\$...I want to choose another hiding spot!” As soon as the little girl stood to reply Lei Yin, she immediately realized that she had exposed her hiding spot.

“Okay, but you have to be fast.”

The little girl immediately changed hiding spot.

After a short countdown, Lei asked again, this time there was no reply.

Lei Yin looked around, after a while he started walking in a particular direction humming loudly with a smile: “Piggy ought to hide better, now the wolf is coming to get you.”

Although Naoko had not played this game in years she felt refreshed playing along. She hid under the covering of some tall grasses. She saw Lei yin walking closer and closer toward her hiding spot, she couldn’t help but feel nervous...

Lei Yin could already tell where she was hiding through the sound of her breath and heartbeat, but he deliberately searched around her hiding spot slowly but he attempt to didn’t catch her. However the suspense caused Naoko’s anxiety to build... After a

while, she saw Lei Yin go to search other places. She was immediately relieved.

Lei Yin continued to wander about searching, whenever he approached Naoko and little girl's hiding spots, both of them became nervous and they couldn't move afraid any noise would alert lei Yin.

After a while, Naoko suddenly heard the scream of a little girl come from nearby. Then she heard Lei's proud laughter, "So this is where you hid little piggy?"

"i am not piglet, I am not fat at all. You must have peeked, otherwise how did you find me so fast?"

"hmm" Lei Yin snorted, "to find a little pig like you, do I still need to peek? I can find you anytime with my eyes closed."

"arghh, I am telling you again I am not a piglet" The little girl protested loudly.

"I am good at catching piglets."

"You... you ... alright, I won't bother with you again. Hurry and back Me."

"how are you going to climb up?"

"Don't complain, quickly back me. Come down a bit, I am scared of height." The little girl said quite grumpily.

"I am your errand boy now huh, you are afraid of heights, yet you want me to back you up?"

A moment later, Lei squatted down, the little girl laughing happily, rounded Lei's neck with her hands as she rested on his back.

Naoko found the conversation between these two very funny as she couldn't help but snicker...

"You play here first, I'm going to catch the big pig." Lei Yin said as he put the little girl on the swing.

“I want to go too ...” But before she finish her sentence, Lei had already pushed the swing up and the little girl quickly grabbed the swing’s ropes.

“You’re so wicked big brother,” The little girl said flustered.

“Just watch, I will catch the other pig before the swing stops swinging.”

The girl immediately shouted: “Big sister, please hide well, do not get caught by this man!”

Lei smiled and walked in the direction of the Naoko.

To see him edging closer and closer toward her caused Naoko’s anxiety to increase towards boiling point.

“Beautiful, beauty, where are you?” Lei Yin taunted while looking around.

Finally, Lei Yin was less than two meters away from Naoko’s hiding spot, and she heard him walking closer and closer. She thought she was going to be caught this time.

But just then, Lei Yin stopped suddenly and said to himself: “Strange, where is her hiding spot? Is it over there?” Having said so, he walked to the assumed spot.

Naoko was happy, she smiled with pride visible.

But just then, a pair of strong and powerful arms held her tightly from behind.

“I am really lucky. I didn’t think I would catch such a beautiful woman at this time. Ha-ha. Now I have a maid for my house chores and laundry.” Lei voice sounded close to Naoko’s ear.

“Damn, you knew a long time ago I was hiding here, but you were just deliberately teasing me again and again.” Naoko choked back anger.

“Congratulations, you’re right, this is your prize.” Lei kissed her cute red face.

Naoko glared at him.

After playing hide and seek again, Lei Yin proposed they played another game called Standing.

The game was simple one, with one person looking at the wall and backing the others, he would count from one to five or seven. The speed and rhythm of the number counting was determined by the person facing the wall .Others would keep walking and moving a distance around the person counting until the counting stopped.

But after each count, everyone must stay still without any movement at the mention of the last number. The person who counted would immediately turn around after the count to see which of them moves or moved. At this time, anyone who was caught making any movement or makes a movement loses and is out of the game, reducing the original number of people and the others continue the game..

The game goes on until there is a final winner. And the second round re-starts with a new counter.

Naoko and the little girl had not played this game before, they were always caught. After the second round, they completely adapted to the rules. However each time, Lei yin finished counted, he played with the speed and rhythm of his count, leaving the girls in funny positions when he stopped his count. Example they would be caught a foot in the air mid movement and other delicate positions. Although these positions were uncomfortable, but the game made them very happy and carefree, the little girl's laughter never stopped.

When it was the turn of either of the girls, they learned and used lei Yin's style of counting. When they deliberately changed the speed and rhythm of counting, they succeeded in catching others off guard. Even Lei Yin was caught one time by the little girl. She shouted excitedly when she led Lei Yin to his downfall.

Next, they continued playing games like jumping planes, cat-and-

mouse, four-sided chess. Later Lei Yin hinted Naoko with his eyes that he was a little tired and he wouldn't play anymore. Then both of them sat on the swing while the little girl sat on Lei Yin's thigh and nagged him for a story. Naoko sat on the other swing smiling at them secretly enjoying lei's suffering.

Unfortunately, Lei Yin was not a good story teller, gave up after speaking a few words and hinted Naoko to help out.

Naoko laughed, after thinking for a moment, she began to tell the little girl the Cinderella story.

Unexpectedly, although this was a well-known fairy tale, the little girl had never heard of it. Her cute eyes were wide open as she listened to Naoko with great interest. Her facial expressions changed with the development of the story and she asked questions from time to time.

When she heard Cinderella was finally found by the prince, her face showed her delight.

Motivated by the rich expressions of the little girl, Naoko spoke more and more. After telling the story of Cinderella, she talked about the story of Snow White and Sleeping Beauty.

As before, the little girl showed great interest in these fairy tales. She listened intently and didn't dare lose concentration.

Unknowingly, when Naoko just finished telling the story sleeping beauty, the first rays of the sun began to light the night.

The little girl suddenly seemed to be aware of something as her expression changed. This expression wasn't that of a little girl any more.

Suddenly noticing the strange silence, Naoko was a little puzzled and ask her: "Is there any problem Sakura?"

The little girl looked up slowly, her eyes full of tears, she said with a smile: "Thank you, big sister, I'm leaving."

Suddenly Naoko's eyes became misty, she smiled and said: "I really like you Sakura, playing with you made me really happy."

"I also like you big sister. You.. hmm... big brother, better look after big sister well." The little girl looked back and said with a serious expression to Lei Yin.

"You don't need to tell me. Did you have a great time tonight?"

"Ah, mmm" the little girl closed her eyes, nodded and put her head on his chest.

"Thank you. I had the best time tonight. I am a little tired, I want to have a good sleep." The little girl whispered.

Lei did not say anything, he just touched her head with his right hand.

When golden rays of light spilled into the garden, the little girl who had been lying in his arms was gone.

"Lei, what happened to Sakura?" After some moments of silence, Naoko asked quietly.

Lei Yin walked to her side, stroking her hair softly and said: "The spirit itself is a kind of energy, and when the obsession is removed, she will dissipate like any other ordinary spirit. She no longer felt lonely and was freed. "

"Who is she?" Last night, Naoko had accidentally touched her body, but she was surprised to find that that her hand passed through. She was like a shadow. At that moment, Naoko knew that the little girl was not human.

Lei Yin said: "This hotel, 60 years ago was a big house. Sakura was the granddaughter of the house owner. Sakura since birth had been very lonely. She stayed in the room every day and unfortunately, she died of illness at the age of nine. Since she was always alone, she really hoped for playmates. Her spiritual body did not dissipate because of such a strong obsession. Although her spirit lived, most people could not see her. Only a few people with

specific brain frequencies can see her when close to her and you are one of them. So that is the reason you heard her crying the night before.”

She showed a sad look in her eyes, “She had been living alone for so many years. Would she have gone on like this if we did not play with her?”

Lei Yin shook his head and said: “Although strong obsession can temporarily maintain her spirit, but the energy will always be exhausted eventually. She would still have dissipated slowly; perhaps it would have taken 50 years maybe even a hundred years from now.” Lei Yin was not completely open with Naoko. Because he is also a spiritual body, so he could see and touch other spiritual bodies. But there are so many spiritual beings in the world such as a little girl who were too persistent and would not dissipate. He however would not have gotten involved in this matter if Naoko had not seen the little girl. After all, he wasn’t a savior.

“You worked hard tonight, you must be tired, let’s go back to sleep, okay?”

Naoko nodded a little weak.

Lei Yin hugged her and helped her down from the swing, and then walked to the room.

“Lei, can people reincarnate?” Naoko who was lying in his arms suddenly asked.

“I believe it is possible. Although the energy forms can be changed, but they will not disappear totally. As the spiritual body is an energy, when it dissipated in this world, it will be transformed into another form of energy, perhaps, then this is the beginning of reincarnation.” Lei Yin answered while walking.

“If there is really a next life, I hope I can stay with you as I am now, never to be separated.” Naoko put his head firmly on his chest as she said.

“When I wake in the next life, I will find you.” Lei Yin kissed her forehead softly.

“Me too.”